ADVENTURE
OF
EREGRINE PICK

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

122

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. IV.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, et veras hinc ducere voces Hor.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row;
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Town and Country.

ers, that in
d so she fills
l is this here,
vixt the comb-
t the rudder of her
ws woundily in her
ome foreign part called the
and wishing herself in a safe birth
lun. The parson, I must say,
r steady concerning the navigation of
alks very sensibly of charity and the
hath left a legacy of two hundred
. And here has been Mr. Gama-
ther, my lord, demanding entrance
fer to see her; but I would not suf-
board, and pointed my patereroes,
m sheer off. Your sister, Mrs. Clo-
'ver, keeps close watch upon her kinswoman, with-
'out ever turning in; and a kind-hearted young woman
'it is. I should be glad to see you at the garrison, if
'the wind of your inclination sits that way; and may-
'hap it may be a comfort to your aunt, to behold you
'along-side of her, when her anchor is apeak. So no
'more at present, but rests your friend and humble ser-
'vant to command,

'JOHN HATCHWAY.'

Next morning, after the receipt of this epistle, Peregrine, in order to manifest his regard to his aunt, as well as his friendship for honest Jack, set out on horseback for their habitation, attended by Pipes, who longed to see his old messmate; but before he reached the garrison, Mrs. Hatchway had given up the ghost, in the threescore and fifth year of her age. The widower seemed to bear his loss with resignation, and behaved very decently upon the occasion, though he did not undergo those dangerous transports of sorrow which some tender hearted husbands have felt at the departure of their wives. The lieutenant was naturally a philosopher, and so well disposed to acquiesce in the dispensations of Providence, that in this, as well as in every

other

other emergency of
every thing which

Peregrine's taſk,
forting him, as in
great poignancy
death of the only
ed any intimacy
as implacable a
Peregrine, and r
that which was o
nation being by th
veteracy of hate. A
fied by the country pe
young ſquire, he ſtill a
to the caprice and vengea
opportunities of diſturbing
reputation, and committing
ants and domeſticks of her h
a quiet and timorous diſpo

But the chief amuſem
later years, was the chac
renown by his intrepidity
improved every day in dero
ſuggeſt a ludicrous ſcheme of revenge
in the nighbourhood. Having been affro
inſolence of Crookback, he clothed a large ba
was in his poſſeſſion in a dreſs that reſembled th
ing equipage of Gam, and ordering the animal to
ſet aſtride, and tied upon the back of his keeneſt hunter, turned them out one day after the hounds. The horſe in a little time out-ſtripping all the reſt in the field, the rider was miſtaken for Gam by the whole company, who ſaluted him as he paſſed with an halloo, obſerving that the ſquire had his uſual good luck, in being better mounted than his neighbours. Pickle afterwards appearing in his own perſon, created great aſtoniſhment in the ſpectators, one of whom aſked if he had ſplit himſelf in twain, and pointed out his repreſentative, who was by this time almoſt up with the hounds:

al Gam went in pur-
vertook him, he was
, that he attacked
f probability would
t, had he not been
They interposed,
betwixt two bro-
surprized and di-
quality of Crook-
ied from his rage,

is friend Jack, took
to which his parents
d not think proper to an-
l to his solicitations, when
ait upon them in person.
l, at the instigation of his
n order from Doctor's Com-
to produce the will of his
at she had bequeathed to
which (he knew) was at
n this step he reaped no
of finding himself altoge-
the testatrix, who had left all her
husband, except one thousand pounds,
wels, to Julia's daughter, the benefaction
in the lieutenant's letter, and some incon-
able legacies to her favourite domesticks.

A few days after the interment of this good lady, our hero was agreeably surprized with a visit from his friend Godfrey, who had come to England in consequence of that promotion which he owed to his interest, though the soldier himself placed it to the credit of a certain courtier, who had formerly promised to befriend him, and now finding his advancement unowned, very modestly arrogated the merit of it to himself. He communicated his good fortune to Pickle, who complimented him upon it as an event of which he had no precognition; and at the same time told him, that,

in

in conſequence of his preferment, his couſin at Windſor had conſented to his being immediately united in the bands of wedlock with his lovely Sophy; that the wedding-day was already fixed; and that nothing would be wanting to his happineſs, if Peregrine would honour the nuptials with his preſence.

Our hero accepted the invitation with great eagerneſs, when he learned that Emilia would be there in quality of bride's maid; and now repeated what he had formerly written to his friend, namely, that he was not only willing, but extremely impatient, to atone for his mad behaviour to that young lady, by laying himſelf and his whole fortune at her feet. Godfrey thanked him for his honourable intention, and promiſed to uſe his influence, and that of Sophy, in his behalf, though he ſeemed dubious of their ſucceſs, on account of his ſiſter's delicacy, which could not pardon the leaſt ſhadow of diſreſpect. He owned, indeed, he was not certain that ſhe would appear in the ſame company with Pickle; but as ſhe had made no ſtipulation on the ſcore, he would interpret her ſilence in the moſt favourable manner, and keep her in ignorance of his deſign, until ſhe ſhould find it too late to retract with any decency. The hope of ſeeing and converſing with Emilia, and perhaps of being reconciled to her, after having ſuffered ſo much and ſo long from her diſpleaſure, raiſed a tumult of ideas in his breaſt, and produced a ſtrange inquietude of joy and perturbation. Gauntlet having ſtaid with him a few days, and ſignified the time appointed for his eſpouſals, took his leave, in order to prepare for the occaſion; while Peregrine, with his friend Hatchway, made a tour among his acquaintance in the country, with a view of ſounding their inclinations touching a project which he had lately conceived, of offering himſelf as a candidate for a certain borough in the neighbourhood, at the enſuing election for members of parliament.

This ſcheme, which was ſuggeſted to him by one of

his quality patrons, would have ſucceeded according to his wiſh, had the election taken place immediately; but before that happened, his intereſt was overbalanced by ſome ſmall accidents that will be recorded in the ſequel. In the mean time he repaired to Windſor, on the eve of his friend's marriage, and underſtood from Godfrey that it was with the utmoſt difficulty he and Sophy could prevail upon his ſiſter to be preſent at the wedding, when ſhe was informed that her lover was invited; and that her conſent had not been obtained, until they had promiſed, on the part of Peregrine, that he ſhould not renew the old topick, nor even ſpeak to her in the ſtyle of a former acquaintance.

Our young gentleman was nettled at this preliminary, to which, however, he ſaid he would adhere; and ſo well did he think himſelf fortified with pride and reſentment, that he reſolved to behave towards her with ſuch indifference, as would, he hoped, mortify her vanity, and thereby puniſh her for the implacability of her diſpoſition. Armed with theſe ſentiments, he was next day introduced by Godfrey to the bride, who received him with her uſual ſweetneſs of temper and affability; and Emilia being preſent, he ſaluted her with a diſtant bow, which ſhe acknowledged with a cold courteſy, and an aſpect of ice. Though this deportment confirmed his diſpleaſure, her beauty undermined his reſolution; he thought her charms were infinitely improved ſince their laſt parting; and a thouſand fond images recurring to his imagination, he felt his whole ſoul diſſolving into tenderneſs and love.

In order to baniſh thoſe dangerous ideas, he endeavoured to enter into a gay converſation with Sophy, on the ſubject of the approaching ceremony; but his tongue performed it's office aukwardly; his eyes were attracted towards Emilia, as if they had been ſubject to the power of faſcination; in ſpite of all his efforts, a deep ſigh eſcaped from his boſom; and his whole appearance indicated anxiety and confuſion.

The bridegroom perceiving his condition, abridged

the

the viſit, and having conducted his companion to his own lodgings, expreſſed his concern at having been the innocent occaſion of his uneaſineſs, by expoſing him to the ſight of Emilia, which he perceived had given him pain. Peregrine, who had by this time recollected the dictates of his pride, aſſured him, that he was very much miſtaken in the cauſe of his diſorder, which was no other than a ſudden qualm, to which he had been for ſome time ſubject: and to ſhew him how philoſophically he could bear the diſdain of Emilia, which, with a deference to her conduct, he could not help thinking a little too ſevere, he deſired, as the bridegroom had made preparation for a private ball in the evening, that he would provide him with an agreeable partner; in which caſe he would exhibit undoubted proofs of the tranquillity of his heart. 'I was in hopes,' anſwered Godfrey, 'of being able, with the aſſiſtance of Sophy, to make up matters between you and my ſiſter, and for that reaſon kept her unengaged to any other gentleman for the night; but ſince ſhe was ſo peeviſhly obſtinate, I ſhall take care to accommodate you with a very handſome young lady, whoſe partner will not be ſorry to exchange her for Emilia.'

The thoughts of having an opportunity to coquet with another woman, under the eye of his implacable miſtreſs, ſupported his ſpirits during the ceremony, which put Gauntlet in poſſeſſion of his heart's deſire; and, by means of this cordial, he found himſelf ſo undiſturbed at dinner, though he ſat oppoſit to his fair enemy, that he was able to paſs ſome occaſional jokes upon the new-married couple, with ſome appearance of mirth and good-humour. Nor did Emily any otherwiſe ſeem affected by his preſence, than by excepting him from the participation of thoſe genial regards which ſhe diſtributed to the reſt of the company. This eaſineſs of behaviour on her ſide, reinforced his reſolution, by giving him pretence to call her ſenſibility in queſtion; for he could not conceive how any woman of acute feelings could ſit unmoved, in preſence of a man with whom

whom ſhe had ſuch recent and intimate connections; not conſidering that ſhe had much more reaſon to condemn his affectation of unconcern, and that her external deportment might, like his own, be an effort of pride and reſentment.

This conteſt, in point of diſſimulation, continued till night, when the company was paired for dancing, and Peregrine began the ball by walking a minuet with the bride; then he took out the young lady to whom he was recommended by Gauntlet, being very well pleaſed to ſee that her perſon was ſuch as might have inſpired even Emily herſelf with jealouſy, though, at the ſame time, he perceived his miſtreſs coupled with a gay young officer, whom (with all due deference to his own qualifications) he conſidered as no deſpicable rival. However, he himſelf firſt began hoſtilities, by becoming all of a ſudden particular with his partner, whom he forthwith aſſailed with flattering compliments, that ſoon introduced the ſubject of love, upon which he expatiated with great art and elocution, uſing not only the faculty of ſpeech, but alſo the language of the eyes, in which he was a perfect connoiſſeur.

This behaviour ſoon manifeſted itſelf to the whole aſſembly, the greateſt part of whom believed that he was in good earneſt captivated by the charms of his partner, while Emilia penetrating into his deſign, turned his own artillery upon himſelf, by ſeeming to liſten with pleaſure to the addreſſes of his rival, who was no novice in the art of making love: ſhe even affected uncommon vivacity, and giggled aloud at every whiſper which he conveyed into her ear, inſomuch that ſhe, in her turn, afforded ſpeculation to the company, who imagined the young ſoldier had made a conqueſt of the bridegroom's ſiſter.

Pickle himſelf began to cheriſh the ſame opinion, which gradually invaded his good humour, and at length filled his boſom with rage. He ſtrove to ſuppreſs his indignation, and called every conſideration of vanity and revenge to his aid; he endeavoured to wean

his eyes from the fatal object that disturbed him, but they would not obey his direction and command; he wished himself deprived of all sensation, when he heard her laugh and saw her smile upon the officer; and in the course of country dancing, when he was obliged to join hands with her, the touch thrilled through all his nerves, and kindled a flame within him which he could not contain. In a word, his endeavours to conceal the situation of his thoughts were so violent, that his constitution could not endure the shock; the sweat ran down his forehead in a stream, the colour vanished from his cheeks, his knees began to totter, and his eye-sight to fail; so that he must have fallen at his full length upon the floor, had not he retired very abruptly into another room, where he threw himself upon a couch and fainted.

In this condition he was found by his friend, who seeing him withdraw with such symptoms of disorder, followed him thither; and when he recovered the use of his faculties, pressed him to make use of a bed in that house, rather than expose himself in the night air, by going home to his own lodgings; but not being able to prevail upon him to accept the offer, he wrapped him up in a cloak, and conducting him to the inn where he lodged, helped him to undress and go to bed, where he was immediately seized with a violent fit of the ague. Godfrey behaved with great tenderness, and would have actually bore him company all night, notwithstanding the circumstances of his own situation, had not his friend insisted upon his returning to the company, and making his apology to his partner for his sudden departure.

This was a step absolutely necessary towards maintaining the quiet of the assembly, which he found in great consternation, occasioned by his absence; for some of the ladies seeing the bridegroom follow the stranger in his retreat, the meaning of which they did not comprehend, began to be afraid of a quarrel. Emilia, upon pretence of that supposition, was so much alarmed,

alarmed, that ſhe could not ſtand, and was fain to have recourſe to a ſmelling-bottle.

The bride, who underſtood the whole myſtery, was the only perſon that acted with deliberation and compoſure; ſhe imputed Emilia's diſorder to the right cauſe, which was no other than concern for the condition of her lover, and aſſured the ladies there was nothing extraordinary in Mr. Pickle's going off, he being ſubject to fainting fits, by which he was often overtaken without any previous notice. The arrival of Gauntlet confirmed the truth of this declaration; he made an apology to the company in the name of his friend, who, he told them, was ſuddenly taken ill, and they returned to their diverſion of dancing: with this variation; Emilia was ſo diſordered and fatigued, that ſhe begged to be excuſed from continuing the exerciſe; and Peregrine's partner being diſengaged, was paired with the young officer, for whom ſhe was originally deſigned.

Meanwhile, the bride withdrew into another apartment, with her ſiſter, and expoſtulated with her upon her cruelty to Mr. Pickle; aſſuring her, from Godfrey's information, that he had undergone a ſevere fit on her account, which, in all likelihood, would have a dangerous effect upon his conſtitution. Though Emily was inflexible in her anſwers to the kind remonſtrances of the gentle Sophy, her heart was melting with the impreſſions of pity and love; and finding herſelf unable to perform the duty of her function, in putting the bride to bed, ſhe retired to her own chamber, and, in ſecret, ſympathized with the diſtemper of her lover.

In the morning, as early as decency would permit him to leave the arms of his dear wife, Captain Gauntlet made a viſit to Peregrine, who had paſſed a very tedious and uneaſy night, having been ſubject to ſhort intervals of delirium, during which Pipes had found it very difficult to keep him faſt belayed. He owned indeed to Godfrey, that his imagination had been haunted by the ideas of Emilia and her officer, which tormented him

him to an unspeakable degree of anguish and distraction; and that he would rather suffer death than a repetition of such excruciating reflections. He was, however, comforted by his friend; who assured him, that his sister's inclinations would in time prevail over all the endeavours of resentment and pride, illustrating this asseveration by an account of the manner in which she was affected by the knowledge of his disorder, and advising him to implore the mediation of Sophy, in a letter which she should communicate to Emilia.

This was an opportunity that our hero thought too favourable to be neglected; calling for paper, he sat up in his bed, and in the first transports of his emotion, wrote the following petition to Godfrey's amiable wife.

'DEAR MADAM,

'THE affliction of a contrite heart can never 'appeal to your benevolence in vain, and therefore I 'presume to approach you, in this season of delight, 'with the language of sorrow, requesting that you will 'espouse the cause of an unhappy lover, who mourns 'with unutterable anguish over his ruined hope, and 'intercede for my pardon with that divine creature, 'whom, in the intemperance and excess of passion, I 'have so mortally offended. Good Heaven! is my 'guilt inexpiable? Am I excluded from all hope of 'remission? Am I devoted to misery and despair? I 'have offered all the atonement which the most perfect 'and sincere penitence could suggest, and she rejects 'my humility and repentance. If her resentment 'would pursue me to the grave, let her signify her pleasure; and may I be branded with the name of villain, 'and remembered with infamy and detestation to all 'posterity, if I hesitate one moment in sacrificing a life 'which is odious to Emilia. Ah! Madam, while I 'thus pour forth the effusions of my grief and distraction, I look around the apartment in which I lie, and 'every well known object that salutes my view, recals 'to my remembrance that fond, that happy day, on

'which

'which the fair, the good, the tender-hearted Sophy 'became my advocate, though I was a ſtranger to her 'acquaintance, and effected a tranſporting reconcilia-'tion between me and that ſame enchanting beauty, 'that is now ſo implacably incenſed. If ſhe is not ſa-'tisfied with the pangs of remorſe and diſappointment, 'the tranſports of madneſs I have undergone, let her 'preſcribe what farther penance ſhe thinks I ought to 'endure: and when I decline her ſentence, let me be 'the object of her eternal diſdain.

'I commit myſelf, dear Madam! dear Sophy! dear 'partner of my friend! to your kind interpoſition. I 'know you will manage my cauſe, as a concern on 'which my happineſs entirely depends: and I hope 'every thing from your compaſſion and beneficence, 'while I fear every thing from her rigour and barba-'rity. Yes! I call it barbarity; a ſavageneſs of de-'licacy, altogether inconſiſtent with the tenderneſs of 'human nature: and may the moſt abject contempt be 'my portion, if I live under its ſcourge!—But I begin 'to rave. I conjure you by your own humanity and 'ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, I conjure you by your love 'for the man whom Heaven hath decreed your pro-'tector, to employ your influence with that angel of 'wrath, in behalf of your obliged and obedient ſer-'vant,

'P. PICKLE.'

This epiſtle was immediately tranſmitted by Godfrey to his wife, who peruſed it with marks of the moſt humane ſympathy; and carrying it into her ſiſter's chamber—'Here is ſomething,' ſaid ſhe, preſenting the paper, which I muſt recommend to your ſerious attention.' Emilia, who immediately gueſſed the meaning of this addreſs, abſolutely refuſed to look upon it, or even to hear it read, till her brother entering her apartment, reprimanded her ſharply for her obſtinacy and pride, accuſed her of folly and diſſimulation, and entered ſo warmly into the intereſts of his friend, that ſhe thought him unkind in his remonſtrances, and burſting into a flood of tears reproached him with partiality

tiality and want of attention. Godfrey, who entertained the moſt perfect love and veneration for his ſiſter, aſked pardon for having given offence, and kiſſing the drops from her fair eyes, begged ſhe would for his ſake liſten to the declaration of his friend.

Thus ſolicited, ſhe could not refuſe to hear the letter; which when he had repeated, ſhe lamented her own fate in being the occaſion of ſo much uneaſineſs; deſiring her brother to aſſure Mr. Pickle that ſhe was not a voluntary enemy to his peace; on the contrary, ſhe wiſhed him all happineſs, though ſhe hoped he would not blame her for conſulting her own, in avoiding any future explanation or connection with a perſon whoſe correſpondence ſhe found herſelf under a neceſſity to renounce.

In vain did the new married couple exhauſt their eloquence in attempting to prove, that the reparation which our hero had offered was adequate to the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; that in reconciling herſelf to a penitent lover, who ſubſcribed to her own terms of ſubmiſſion, her honour would be acquitted by the moſt ſcrupulous and ſevere judges of decorum; and that her inflexibility would be juſtly aſcribed to the pride and inſenſibility of her heart. She turned a deaf ear to all their arguments, exhortations, and entreaties, and threatened to leave the houſe immediately, if they would not promiſe to drop that ſubject of diſcourſe.

Godfrey, very much chagrined at the bad ſucceſs of his endeavours, returned to his friend, and made as favourable a report of the affair as the nature of his converſation with Emilia would permit: but as he could not avoid mentioning her reſolution in the cloſe, Peregrine was obliged to drink again the bitter draught of diſappointment, which put his paſſion into ſuch a ſtate of agitation, as produced a ſhort extaſy of deſpair, in which he acted a thouſand extravagancies. This paroxyſm, however, ſoon ſubſided into a ſettled reſerve of gloomy reſentment, which he in ſecret indulged, detaching

taching himſelf as ſoon as poſſible from the company of the ſoldier, on pretence of retiring to reſt.

While he lay ruminating upon the circumſtances of his preſent ſituation, his friend Pipes, who knew the cauſe of his anxiety, and firmly believed that Emilia loved his maſter in her heart, howſoever ſhe might attempt to diſguiſe her ſentiments; I ſay, Thomas was taken with a conceit which he thought would ſet every thing to rights, and therefore put it into execution without further delay. Laying aſide his hat, he ran directly to the houſe of Sophy's father, and affecting an air of ſurprize and conſternation, to which he had never before been ſubject, thundered at the door with ſuch an alarming knock, as in a moment brought the whole family into the hall. When he was admitted, he began to gape, ſtare, and pant, at the ſame time, and made no reply, when Godfrey aſked what was the matter, till Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her apprehenſion about his maſter. When Pickle's name was mentioned, he ſeemed to make an effort to ſpeak, and in a bellowing tone pronounced—' Brought himſelf up, ſplit my topſails!' ſo ſaying, he pointed to his own neck, and roſe upon his tiptoes, by way of explaining the meaning of his words.

Godfrey, without ſtaying to aſk another queſtion, ruſhed out, and flew towards the inn, with the utmoſt horror and concern; while Sophy, who did not rightly underſtand the language of the meſſenger, addreſſing herſelf to him a ſecond time, ſaid with great earneſtneſs, ' I hope no accident has happened to Mr. Pickle—' ' No accident at all,' replied Tom; ' he has only hanged himſelf for love.' Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when Emilia, who ſtood liſtening at the parlour door, ſhrieked aloud, and dropped down ſenſeleſs upon the floor; while her ſiſter, who was almoſt equally ſhocked at the intelligence, had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of her maid, by whom ſhe was ſupported from falling.

Pipes hearing Emily's voice, congratulated himſelf upon

upon the ſucceſs of his ſtratagem. He ſprung to her aſſiſtance, and lifting her up into an eaſy-chair, ſtood by her until he ſaw her recover from her ſwoon, and heard her call upon his maſter's name with all the frenzy of deſpairing love. Then he bent his courſe back to the inn, overjoyed at the opportunity of telling Peregrine what a confeſſion he had extorted from his miſtreſs, and extremely vain of this proof of his own ſagacity.

In the mean time, Godfrey arriving at the houſe in which he ſuppoſed this fatal cataſtrophe had happened, ran up ſtairs to Peregrine's chamber, without ſtaying to make any enquiry below; and finding the door locked, burſt it open with one ſtroke of his foot. But what was his amazement, when, upon entrance, our hero ſtarting up from the bed, ſaluted him with a boiſterous exclamation of 'Z——ds! who's there?' He was ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment, which alſo rivetted him to the place where he ſtood, ſcarce crediting the teſtimony of his own ſenſes; till Peregrine, with an air of diſcontent, which denoted him diſpleaſed with his intruſion, diſpelled his apprehenſion by a ſecond addreſs, ſaying—'I ſee you conſider me as a friend, by your uſing me without ceremoney.'

The ſoldier thus convinced of the falſhood of the information he had received, began to imagine that Pickle had projected the plan which was executed by his ſervant; and looking upon it as a piece of unjuſtifiable fineſſe, which might be attended with very melancholy conſequences to his ſiſter or wife, he anſwered, in a ſupercilious tone, that Mr. Pickle muſt blame himſelf for the interruption of his repoſe, which was intirely owing to the ſorry jeſt he had ſet on foot.

Pickle, who was the child of paſſion, and more than half mad with impatience before this viſit, hearing himſelf treated in ſuch a cavalier manner, advanced up to Godfrey's breaſt, and aſſuming a ſtern, or rather frantic countenance—'Hark ye, Sir!' ſaid he; 'you are miſtaken if you think I jeſt; I am in downright earneſt,

I aſſure you.' Gauntlet, who was not a man to be brow-beaten, ſeeing himſelf thus bearded by a perſon of whoſe conduct he had, he thought, reaſon to complain, put on his military look of defiance, and erecting his cheſt, replied with an exalted voice—'Mr. Pickle, whether you was in jeſt or earneſt, you muſt give me leave to tell you, that the ſcheme was childiſh, unſeaſonable, and unkind, not to give it a harſher term.'—'Death, Sir!' cried our adventurer, 'you trifle with my diſquiet: if there is any meaning in your inſinuation, explain yourſelf, and then I ſhall know what anſwer it will befit me to give.'—'I came with very different ſentiments,' reſumed the ſoldier; 'but ſince you urge me to expoſtulation, and behave with ſuch unprovoked loftineſs of diſpleaſure, I will, without circumlocution, tax you with having committed an outrage upon the peace of my family, in ſending your fellow to alarm us with ſuch an abrupt account of your having done violence upon yourſelf.' Peregrine, confounded at this imputation, ſtood ſilent, with a moſt ſavage aſpect of ſurprize, eager to know the circumſtance to which his accuſer alluded, and incenſed to find it beyond the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While theſe two irritated friends ſtood fronting each other with mutual indignation in their eyes and attitudes, they were joined by Pipes; who, without taking the leaſt notice of the ſituation in which he found them, told his maſter, that he might up with the top-gallant-maſts of his heart, and out with his rejoicing pendants; for as to Miſtreſs Emily, he had clapped her helm a weather, the veſſel wore, and now ſhe was upon the other tack, ſtanding right into the harbour of his good-will.

Peregrine, who was not yet a connoiſſeur in the terms of his lacquey, commanded him, upon pain of his diſpleaſure, to be more explicit in his intelligence; and by dint of divers queſtions, obtained a perfect knowledge of the ſcheme which he had put in execution for his ſervice. This information perplexed him

not a little; he would have chastised his servant upon the spot for his temerity, had he not plainly perceived that the fellow's intention was to promote his ease and satisfaction; and on the other hand he knew not how to acquit himself of the suspicion which he saw Godfrey entertained of his being the projector of the plan, without condescending to an explanation, which his present disposition could not brook. After some pause, however, turning to Pipes with a severe frown—'Rascal!' said he, 'this is the second time I have suffered in the opinion of that lady by your ignorance and presumption; if ever you intermeddle in my affairs for the future, without express order and direction, by all that's sacred, I will put you to death without mercy! Away! and let my horse be saddled this instant.'

Pipes having withdrawn, in order to perform this piece of duty, our young gentleman addressing himself again to the soldier, and laying his hand upon his breast, said, with a solemnity of regard—'Captain Gauntlet, upon my honour, I am altogether innocent of that shallow device which you impute to my invention; and I don't think you do justice either to my intellects or honour, in supposing me capable of such insolent absurdity. As for your sister, I have once in my life affronted her in the madness and impetuosity of desire; but I have made such acknowledgments, and offered such atonement, as few women of her sphere would have refused; and, before God! I am determined to endure every torment of disappointment and despair, rather than prostrate myself again to the cruelty of her unjustifiable pride.' So saying, he stalked suddenly down stairs, and took horse immediately; his spirits being supported by resentment, which prompted him to vow within himself, that he would seek consolation for the disdain of Emilia, in the possession of the first willing wench he should meet upon the road.

While he set out for the garrison with these sentiments, Gauntlet in a suspence, between anger, shame, and concern, returned to the house of his father-in-law,

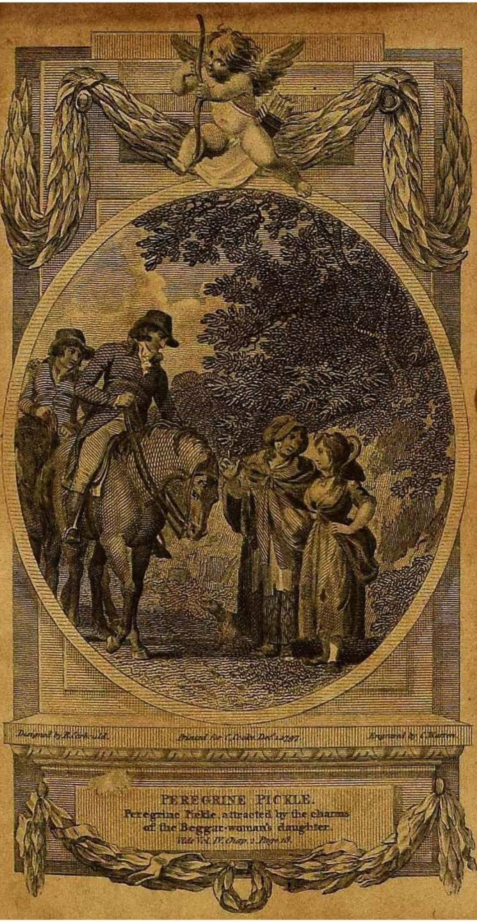
where he found his sister still violently agitated from the news of Peregrine's death, the mystery of which he forthwith unravelled, recounting at the same time the particulars of the conversation which happened at the inn, and describing the demeanour of Pickle with some expressions of asperity, which were neither agreeable to Emila, nor approved by the gentle Sophy, who tenderly chid him, for allowing Peregrine to depart in terms of misunderstanding.

CHAP. II.

Peregrine sets out for the Garrison, and meets with a Nymph on the Road, whom he takes into Keeping, and metamorphoses into a fine Lady.

IN the mean time, our hero jogged along in a profound reverie, which was disturbed by a beggar-woman and her daughter, who solicited him for alms, as he passed them on the road. The girl was about the age of sixteen, and notwithstanding the wretched equipage in which she appeared, exhibited to his view a set of agreeable features, enlivened with the complexion of health and chearfulness. The resolution I have already mentioned was still warm in his imagination; and he looked upon this young mendicant as a very proper object for the performance of his vow. He therefore entered into a conference with the mother, and for a small sum of money purchased her property in the wench, who did not require much courtship and entreaty, before she consented to accompany him to any place that he should appoint for her habitation.

This contract being settled to his satisfaction, he ordered Pipes to seat his acquisition behind him upon the crupper, and alighting at the first public-house which they found upon the road, he wrote a letter to Hatchway, desiring him to receive this hedge-inamorata, and direct her to be cleaned and cloathed in a decent manner with all expedition, so that she should be touchable upon his arrival, which (on that account) he would defer for the space of one day. This billet, together with the girl, he committed to the charge of Pipes,



PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Peregrine Pickle attracted by the charms of the Beggar-woman's daughter.

Vide Vol. IV. Chap. 2. Page 18.

Pipes, after having laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to abſtain from all attempts upon her chaſtity, and ordered him to make the beſt of his way to the garriſon, while he himſelf croſſed the country to a market-town, where he propoſed to ſpend the night.

Tom, thus cautioned, proceeded with his charge, and being naturally taciturn, opened not his lips until he had performed the beſt part of his journey. But Thomas, notwithſtanding his irony appearance, was in reality compoſed of fleſh and blood. His deſire being titillated by the contact of a buxom wench, whoſe right-arm embraced his middle as he rode, his thoughts began to mutiny againſt his maſter, and he found it altogether impoſſible to withſtand the temptation of making love.

Nevertheleſs, he wreſtled with theſe rebellious ſuggeſtions with all the reaſon that Heaven had enabled him to exert; and that being totally overcome, his victorious paſſion ſuddenly broke out in this addreſs: 'Sblood! a believe maſter think I have no more ſtuff in my body than a dried haddock, to turn me adrift in the dark with ſuch a ſpanker. D'ye think he don't, my dear?' To this queſtion his fellow-traveller replied,—'Swanker anan!' And the lover reſumed his ſuit, ſaying, 'Oons! how you tickle my timber! Something ſhoots from your arm through my ſtowage, to the very keel-ſtone. Han't you got quickſilver in your hand?'—'Quickſilver!' ſaid the lady. 'D—n the ſilver that has croſſed my hand this month. D'ye think if I had ſilver, I ſhouldn't buy me a ſmock?'—'Adſooks! you baggage,' cried the lover, 'you ſhouldn't want a ſmock, nor a petticoat neither, if you could have a kindneſs for a true-hearted ſailor, as ſound and ſtrong as a nine-inch cable, that would keep all clear above-board, and every thing ſnug under the hatches.'—'Curſe your gum,' ſaid the charmer, 'what's your gay balls and your hatches to me?—'Do but let us bring to a little,' anſwered the wooer,

 whoſe

whoſe appetite was by this time whetted to a moſt ravenous degree, 'and I'll teach you to box the compaſs, my dear. Ah! you ſtrapper, what a jolly bitch you are!'—'Bitch,' exclaimed this modern dulcinea, incenſed at the opprobrious term; 'ſuch a bitch as your mother, you dog! D—n you, I've a good mind to box your jaws inſtead of your come-piſs. I'll let you know as how I am meat for your maſter, you ſaucy blackguard. You are worſe than a dog, you old flinty faced, flea-bitten ſcrub: a dog wears his own coat, but you wear your maſter's.'

Such a torrent of diſgraceful epithets from a perſon who had no cloaths at all, converted the gallant's love into choler, and he threatened to diſmount and tye her to a tree, when ſhe ſhould have a taſte of his cat and nine tails athwart her quarter; but, inſtead of being intimidated by his menaces, ſhe ſet him at defiance, and held forth with ſuch a flow of eloquence, as would have entitled her to a conſiderable ſhare of reputation, even among the nymphs of Billingſgate; for this young lady, over and above a natural genius for altercation, had her talents cultivated among the venerable ſociety of weeders, podders, and hoppers, with whom ſhe had aſſociated from her tender years. No wonder then, that ſhe ſoon obtained a compleat victory over Pipes, who (as the reader may have obſerved) was very little addicted to the exerciſe of ſpeech: indeed he was utterly diſconcerted by her volubility of tongue; and being altogether unfurniſhed with anſwers to the diſtinct periods of her diſcourſe, very wiſely choſe to ſave himſelf the expence of breath and argument, by giving her a full ſwing of cable, ſo that ſhe might bring herſelf up; while he rode onwards in ſilent compoſure, without taking any more notice of his fair fellow-traveller than if ſhe had been his maſter's cloak-bag.

In ſpite of all the diſpatch he could make, it was late before he arrived at the garriſon, where he delivered the letter and the lady to the lieutenant, who no ſooner underſtood the intention of his friend, than he

ordered

ordered all the tubs in the houſe to be carried into the hall and filled with water. Tom having provided himſelf with ſwabs and bruſhes, diveſted the fair ſtranger of the variegated drapery, which was immediately commited to the flames, and performed upon her ſoft and ſleek perſon the ceremony of ſcrubbing, as it is practiſed on board of the king's ſhips of war. Yet the nymph herſelf did not ſubmit to this purification without repining; ſhe curſed the director, who was upon the ſpot, with many abuſive alluſions to his wooden led; and as for Pipes, the operator, ſhe employed her talons ſo effectually upon his face, that the blood ran over his noſe in ſundry ſtreams; and next morning, when thoſe rivulets were dry, his countenance reſembled the rough bark of a plumb-tree, plaſtered with gum. Nevertheleſs, he did his duty with great perſeverance; cut off her hair cloſe to the ſcalp; handled his bruſhes with dexterity; applied his ſwabs of different magnitude and texture as the caſe required; and laſtly rinſed the whole body with a dozen pails of cold water, diſcharged upon her head.

Theſe ablutions being executed, he dried her with towels, accommodated her with a clean ſhift, and acting the part of a valet de chambre, cloathed her from head to foot in clean and decent apparel, which had belonged to Mrs. Hatchway; by which means her appearance was altered ſo much for the better, that when Peregrine arrived next day, he could ſcarce believe his own eyes. He was, for that reaſon extremely well pleaſed with his purchaſe, and now reſolved to indulge a whim which ſeized him at the very inſtant of his arrival.

He had (as I believe the reader will readily allow) made conſiderable progreſs in the ſtudy of character, from the higheſt rank to the moſt humble ſtation of life, and found it diverſified in the ſame manner, through every degree of ſubordination and precedency: nay, he moreover obſerved, that the converſation of thoſe who are dignified with the appellation of polite company, is neither more edifying nor entertaining than

than that which is met with among the lower classes of mankind, and that the only essential difference in point of demeanor is the form of an education, which the meanest capacity can acquire without much study or application. Possessed of this notion, he determined to take the young mendicant under his own tutorage and instruction; in consequence of which he hoped he should, in a few weeks, be able to produce her in company as an accomplished young lady of uncommon wit, and an excellent understanding.

This extravagant plan he forthwith began to execute with great eagerness and industry; and his endeavours succeeded even beyond his expectation. The obstacle, in surmounting of which he found the greatest difficulty, was an inveterate habit of swearing, which had been indulged from her infancy, and confirmed by the example of those among whom she had lived. However, she had the rudiments of good-sense from nature, which taught her to listen to wholesome advice, and was so docile as to comprehend and retain the lessons which her governor recommended to her attention; insomuch, that he ventured in a few days to present her at table, among a set of country squires, to whom she was introduced as niece to the lieutenant. In that capacity she sat with becoming easiness of mien, (for she was as void of the *mauvaise honte* as any duchess in the land) bowed very gracefully to the compliments of the gentlemen; and though she said little or nothing, because she was previously cautioned on that score, she more than once gave way to laughter, and her mirth happened to be pretty well timed. In a word, she attracted the applause and admiration of the guests; who, after she was withdrawn, complimented Mr. Hatchway upon the beauty, breeding, and good-humour of his kinswoman.

But what contributed more than any other circumstance to her speedy improvement, was some small insight into the Primer which she had acquired at a day-school, during the life of her father, who was a day-

labourer

labourer in the country. Upon this foundation did Peregrine build a moſt elegant ſuperſtructure; he culled out choice ſentences from Shakeſpeare, Otway, and Pope, and taught her to repeat them with an emphaſis and theatrical cadence: he then inſtructed her in the names and epithets of the moſt celebrated players, which he directed her to pronounce occaſionally, with an air of careleſs familiarity; and, perceiving that her voice was naturally clear, he enriched it with remnants of opera-tunes, to be hummed during a pauſe in converſation, which is generally ſupplied with the circulation of a pinch of ſnuff. By means of this cultivation, ſhe became a wonderful proficient in the polite graces of the age; ſhe, with great facility, comprehended the ſcheme of whiſt, though cribbage was her favourite game, with which ſhe had amuſed herſelf in her vacant hours, from her firſt entrance into that profeſſion of hopping; and brag ſoon grew familiar to her practice and conception.

Thus prepared, ſhe was expoſed to the company of her own ſex, being firſt of all viſited by the parſon's daughter, who could not avoid ſhewing that civility to Mr. Hatchway's niece, after ſhe had made her public appearance at church. Mrs. Clover, who had a great ſhare of penetration, could not help entertaining ſome doubts about this ſame relation, whoſe name ſhe had never heard the uncle mention, during the whole term of her reſidence at the garriſon: but as the young lady was treated in that character, ſhe would not refuſe her acquaintance, and after having ſeen her at the caſtle, actually invited Miſs Hatchway to her houſe. In ſhort, ſhe made a progreſs through almoſt all the families in the neighbourhood, and, by dint of her quotations, (which, by the bye, were not always judiciouſly uſed) ſhe paſſed for a ſprightly young lady of uncommon learning and taſte.

Peregrine having, in this manner, initiated her in the beau monde of the country, conducted her to London, where ſhe was provided with private lodgings and

a female attendant; and put her immediately under the tuition of his valet de chambre, who had orders to instruct her in dancing and the French language. He attended her to plays and concerts three or four times a week; and when our hero thought her sufficiently accustomed to the sight of great company, he squired her in person to a public assembly, and danced with her among all the gay ladies of fashion: not but that there was still an evident air of rusticity and aukwardness in her demeanour, which was interpreted into an agreeable wildness of spirit, superior to the forms of common breeding. He afterwards found means to make her acquainted with some distinguished patterns of her own sex, by whom she was admitted into the most elegant parties, and continued to make good her pretensions to gentility with great circumspection. But, one evening, being at cards with a certain lady, whom she detected in the very act of unfair conveyance, she taxed her roundly with the fraud, and brought upon herself such a torrent of sarcastick reproof, as overbore all her maxims of caution, and burst open the flood-gates of her own natural repartee, twanged off with the appellation of b—— and w——, which she repeated with great vehemence, in an attitude of manual defiance, to the terror of her autagonist, and the astonishment of all present: nay, to such an unguarded pitch was she provoked, that starting up, she snapped her fingers, in testimony of disdain; and, as she quitted the room, applied her hand to that part which was the last of her that disappeared, inviting the company to kiss it, by one of it's coarsest denominations.

Peregrine was a little disconcerted at this oversight in her behaviour; which, by the demon of intelligence, was, in a moment conveyed to all the private companies in town: so that she was absolutely excluded from all polite communication; and Peregrine, for the present, disgraced among the modest part of his female acquaintance, many of whom not only forbade him their houses, on account of the impudent insult he had

committed

committed upon their honour as well as underſtanding, in palming a common trull upon them, as a young lady of birth and education; but alſo aſperſed his family, by affirming that ſhe was actually his own couſin-german, whom he had precipitately raiſed from the moſt abject ſtate of humility and contempt. In revenge for this calumny, our young gentleman explained the whole myſtery of her promotion, together with the motive that induced him to bring her into the faſhionable world; and repeated among his companions the extravagant encomiums which had been beſtowed upon her by the moſt deſerving matrons of the age.

Meanwhile, the infanta herſelf being rebuked by her benefactor for this inſtance of miſbehaviour, promiſed faithfully to keep a ſtricter guard for the future over her conduct, and applied herſelf with great aſſiduity to the ſtudies, in which ſhe was aſſiſted by the Swiſs, who gradually loſt the freedom of his heart, while ſhe was profiting by his inſtruction. In other words, ſhe made a conqueſt of her preceptor, who yielding to the inſtigations of the fleſh, choſe a proper opportunity to declare his paſſion, which was powerfully recommended by his perſonal qualifications; and his intention being honourable, ſhe liſtened to his propoſals of eſpouſing her in private. In conſequence of this agreement, they made an elopement together; and being buckled at the Fleet, conſummated their nuptials in private lodgings by the Seven Dials, from which the huſband next morning ſent a letter to our hero, begging forgiveneſs for the clandeſtine ſtep he had taken, which he ſolemnly proteſted was not owing to any abatement in his inviolable regard for his maſter, whom he ſhould always honour and eſteem to his lateſt breath, but entirely to the irreſiſtible charms of the young lady, to whom he was now ſo happy as to be joined in the ſilken bonds of marriage.

Peregrine, though at firſt offended at his valet's preſumption, was, upon ſecond thoughts, reconciled to the event, by which he was delived from an incumbrance;

for

for by this time he had performed his frolick, and began to be tired of his acquisition. He reflected on the former fidelity of the Swiss, which had been manifested in a long course of service and attachment; and thinking it would be cruelly severe to abandon him to poverty and distress for one venial trespass, he resolved to pardon what he had done, and enable him in some shape to provide for the family which he had entailed upon himself.

With these sentiments, he sent a favourable answer to the delinquent, desiring to see him as soon as his passion should permit him to leave the arms of his spouse for an hour or two; and Hadgi, in obedience to this intimation, repaired immediately to the lodgings of his master, before whom he appeared with a most penitential aspect. Peregrine, though he could scarce help laughing at his rueful length of face, reprimanded him sharply for his disrespect and ingratitude, in taking that by stealth which he might have had for asking. The culprit assured him, that next to the vengeance of God, his master's displeasure was that which, of all evils, he dreaded to incur; but that love had distracted his brain in such a manner, as to banish every other consideration but that of gratifying his desire; and he owned that he should not have been able to preserve his fidelity and duty to his own father, had they interfered with the interest of his passion. He then appealed to his master's own heart for the remission of his guilt, alluding to certain circumstances of our hero's conduct which evinced the desperate effects of love. In short he made such an apology, as extorted a smile from his offended judge, who not only forgave his transgression but also promised to put him in some fair way of earning a comfortable subsistence.

The Swiss was so much affected with this instance of generosity, that he fell upon his knees, and kissed his hand, praying to Heaven with great fervour to make him worthy of such goodness and condescension. His scheme, he said, was to open a coffee-house and tavern

tavern in ſome creditable part of the town, in hopes of being favoured with the cuſtom of a numerous acquaintance he had made among upper ſervants and reputable tradeſmen, not doubting that his wife would be an ornament to his bar, and a careful manager of his affairs. Peregrine approved of the plan, towards the execution of which he made him and his wife a preſent of five hundred pounds, together with the promiſe of erecting a weekly club among his friends, for the reputation and advantage of the houſe.

Hadgi was ſo tranſported with his good fortune, that he ran to Pipes, who was in the room, and having hugged him with great cordiality, and made his obedience to his maſter, hied him home to his bride, to communicate his happineſs, cutting capers, and talking to himſelf all the way.

CHAP. III.

He is viſited by Pallet; contracts an Intimacy with a Newmarket Nobleman; and is by the knowing Ones taken in.

THIS affair being ſettled, and our adventurer, for the preſent, free of all female connections, he returned to his former courſe of faſt living among the bucks of the town, and performed innumerable exploits among whores, bullies, rooks, conſtables, and juſtices of the peace.

In the midſt of theſe occupations, he was one morning viſited by his old fellow-traveller Pallet, whoſe appearance gave him equal ſurprized and concern. Though the weather was ſevere, he was cloathed in the thin ſummer-dreſs which he had wore at Paris, and was now not only thread-bare, but in ſome parts actually patched; his ſtockings, by a repetition of that practice known among œconomiſts by the term of *coaxing*, hung like pudding-bags about his ankles: his ſhirt, though new waſhed, was of the ſaffron hue, and in divers places appeared through the crannies of his breeches: he had exchanged his own hair for a ſmoke-dried tye-periwig, which all the flour in his dredging-box had not been

able to whiten; his eyes were ſunk; his jaws lengthened beyond their uſual extenſion; and he ſeemed twenty years older than he looked when he and our hero parted at Rotterdam.

In ſpite of all theſe evidences of decay, he accoſted him with a meagre affectation of content and good-humour; ſtruggled piteouſly to appear gay and unconcerned; profeſſed his joy at ſeeing him in England; excuſed himſelf for having delayed ſo long to come and preſent his reſpects; alledging, that ſince his return he had been a mere ſlave to the ſatisfaction of ſome perſons of quality and taſte, who had inſiſted upon his finiſhing ſome pieces with the utmoſt expedition.

Peregrine received him with that compaſſion and complaiſance which was natural to his diſpoſition; enquired about the health of Mrs. Pallet and his family, and aſked if his friend the doctor was in town. The painter ſeemed to have reſumed his reſentment againſt that gentleman, of whom he ſpoke in contemptuous terms. 'The doctor,' ſaid he, 'is ſo much overſhadowed with preſumption and ſelf-conceit, that his merit has no relief. It does not riſe. There is no keeping in the picture, my dear Sir. All the ſame as if I were to repreſent the moon under a cloud; there will be nothing but a deep maſs of ſhade, with a little tiny ſpeck of light in the middle, which would only ſerve to make, as it were, the darkneſs viſible: you underſtand me. Had he taken my advice, it might have been better for him; but he is bigotted to his own opinion. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, upon our return to England, I counſelled him to compoſe a little ſmart, clever ode, upon my Cleopatra. As Gad ſhall judge me, I thought it would have been of ſome ſervice in helping him out of obſcurity; for you know, as Sir Richard obſerves,

Soon will that die, which adds thy fame to mine:
Let me then live, join'd to a work of thine.

By the bye, there is moſt pictureſque contraſt in these lines, of and *thy* and *me*, *living* and *dying*, and *thine* and *mine*.

mine. Ah! a pize upon it! Dick, after all, was the man. Ecod! he rounded it off. But, to return to this unhappy young man, would you believe it, he toſſed up his noſe at my friendly propoſal, and gabbled ſomething in Greek, which is not worth repeating. The caſe was this, my dear Sir; he was out of humour at the neglect of the world. He thought the poets of the age were jealous of his genius, and ſtrove to cruſh it accordingly, while the reſt of mankind wanted taſte ſufficient to diſcern it. For my own part, I profeſs myſelf one of theſe; and as the Clown in Billy Shakeſpeare ſays of the courtier's oath, had I ſworn by the doctor's genius, that the pancakes were nought, they might have been for all that very good, yet ſhouldn't I have been forſworn? Let that be as it will, he retired from town in great dudgeon, and ſet up his reſt near a hill in Derbyſhire, with two tops, reſembling Parnaſſus, and a well at the bottom, which he had chriſtened Hyp-o-the-Green. Egad! if he ſtays in that habitation, 'tis my opinion he'll ſoon grow green with the hip indeed. He'll be glad of an opportunity to return to the fleſh-pots of Egypt, and pay his court to the ſlighted Queen Cleopatra. Ha! well remembered! by this light you ſhall know, my good Sir, that this ſame Egyptian princeſs has been courted by ſo many gallants of taſte, that, as I hope to live, I found myſelf in ſome ſort of dilemma, becauſe in parting with her to one, I ſhould have diſobliged all his rivals. Now, a man would not chuſe to give offence to his friends; at leaſt, I lay it down as a maxim, to avoid the ſmalleſt appearance of ingratitude. Perhaps I may be in the wrong: but every man has his way. For this reaſon, I propoſed to all the candidates, that a lottery or raffle ſhould be ſet on foot, by which every individual would have an equal chance for her good graces, and the prize be left to the deciſion of Fortune. The ſcheme was mightily reliſhed; and the terms being ſuch a trifle as half a guinea, the whole town crouded into my houſe, in order to ſubſcribe. But there I was there humble

ſervant.

ſervant. "Gentlemen, you muſt have a little patience till my own particular friends are ſerved." Among that number, I do myſelf the honour to conſider Mr. Pickle. Here is a copy of the propoſals: and if the liſt ſhould be adorned with his name, I hope, notwithſtanding his merited ſucceſs among the young ladies, he will for once be ſhunned by that little vixen called Miſs Fortune. He! he! he!'

So ſaying, he bowed with a thouſand apiſh congees, and preſented his paper to Peregrine; who ſeeing the number of ſubſcribers was limited to one hundred, ſaid he thought him too moderate in his expectations, as he did not doubt that his picture would be a cheap purchaſe at five hundred, inſtead of fifty pounds, at which the price was fixed. To this unexpected remark Pallet anſwered, that among the connoiſſeurs he would not pretend to appraiſe his picture; but that, in valuing his works, he was obliged to have an eye to the Gothick ignorance of the age in which he lived.

Our adventurer ſaw at once into the nature of this raffle, which was no other than a begging ſhift to diſpoſe of a paltry piece, that he could not otherwiſe have ſold for twenty ſhillings. However, far from ſhocking the poor man in diſtreſs, by dropping the leaſt hint of his conjecture, he deſired to be favoured with ſix chances, if the circumſtances of his plan would indulge him ſo far; and the painter, after ſome heſitation, condeſcended to comply with his requeſt, out of pure freindſhip and veneration; though he obſerved, that in ſo doing he muſt exclude ſome of his moſt intimate companions. Having received the money, he gave Pickle his addreſs, deſiring he would, with his convenience, viſit the princeſs, who, he was ſure, would diſplay her moſt engaging attractions, in order to captivate his fancy; and took his leave, extremely well pleaſed with the ſucceſs of his application.

Though Peregrine was tempted with the curioſity of ſeeing this portrait, which he imagined muſt contain ſome analogy to the ridiculous oddity of the painter, he

he would not expoſe himſelf to the diſagreeable alternative of applauding the performance, contrary to the dictates of conſcience and common ſenſe, or of condemning it, to the unſpeakable mortification of the miſerable author; and therefore never dreamed of returning the painter's viſit; nor did he ever hear of the lottery's being drawn.

About this time he was invited to ſpend a few weeks at the country ſeat of a certain nobleman, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance, in the courſe of his debauches, which we have already deſcribed. His lordſhip being remarkable for his ſkill and ſucceſs in horſe-racing, his houſe was continually filled with the connoiſſeurs and admirers of that ſport, upon which the whole converſation turned, inſomuch that Peregrine gradually imbibed ſome knowledge in horſe-fleſh, and the diverſions of the courſe; for the whole occupation of the day, excluſive of eating and drinking, conſiſted in viewing, managing, and exerciſing his lordſhip's ſtud.

Our hero looked upon theſe amuſements with an eye of taſte, as well as curioſity; he contemplated the animal as a beautiful and elegant part of the creation, and reliſhed the ſurpriſing exertion of it's ſpeed with a refined and claſſical delight. In a little time he became perſonally acquainted with every horſe in the ſtable, and intereſted himſelf in the reputation of each; while he alſo gratified his appetite for knowledge, in obſerving the methods of preparing their bodies, and training them to the race. His landlord ſaw and encouraged his eagerneſs, from which he promiſed himſelf ſome advantage; he formed ſeveral private matches for his entertainment, and flattered his diſcernment, by permitting him to be ſucceſsful in the firſt betts he made. Thus was he artfully decoyed into a ſpirit of keenneſs and adventure, and diſpoſed to depend upon his own judg men in oppoſition to that of people who had made horſe-racing the ſole ſtudy of their lives. He acompanied my lord to Newmarket; and entering at once into the

genius of the place, was marked as fair game by all the knowing ones there aſſembled, many of whom found means to *take him in*, in ſpite of all the cautions and admonitions of his lordſhip, who wanted to reſerve him for his own uſe.

It is almoſt impoſſible for any man, let him be never ſo fearful or phlegmatick, to be an unconcerned ſpectator in this buſy ſcene. The demon of play hovers in the air, like a peſtilential vapour, tainting the minds of all preſent with infallible infection, which communicates from one perſon to another like the circulation of a general panick. Peregrine was ſeized with this epidemick diſtemper to a violent degree; and, after having loſt a few looſe hundreds, in his progreſs through the various rookeries of the place, entered into partnerſhip with his noble friend in a grand match, upon the iſſue of which he ventured no leſs than three thouſand pounds. Indeed he would not have riſked ſuch a conſiderable ſum, had not his own confidence been reinforced by the opinion and concurrence of his lordſhip, who hazarded an equal bett upon the ſame event. Theſe two aſſociates engaged themſelves in the penalty of ſix thouſand pounds, to run one chaiſe and four againſt another, three times round the courſe; and our adventurer had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing his antagoniſt diſtanced in the firſt and ſecond heat; but all on a ſudden, one of the horſes of his machine was knocked up, by which accident the victory was raviſhed almoſt from his very graſp, and he was obliged to endure the damage and the ſcorn.

He was deeply affected with this misfortune, which he imputed to his own extravagance and temerity, but diſcovered no external ſigns of affliction, becauſe his illuſtrious partner bore his loſs with the moſt philoſophick reſignation, conſoling himſelf, as well as Pickle, with the hope of making it up on ſome other occaſion. Nevertheleſs, our young gentleman could not help admiring and even envying his equanimity, not knowing that his lordſhip had managed matters ſo as to be a gainer by the

the misfortune; which to retrieve, Peregrine purchaſed ſeveral horſes, at the recommendation of his friend, and inſtead of returning to London, made a tour with him to all the celebrated races in England; at which, after ſeveral viciſſitudes of fortune, he made ſhift, before the end of the ſeaſon, to treble his loſs.

But his hopes ſeemed to increaſe with his ill-luck. In the beginning of winter he came to town, fully perſuaded that fortune muſt neceſſarily change, and that the next ſeaſon he ſhould reap the happy fruits of his experience. In this confidence he ſeemed to drown all ideas of prudence and œconomy. His former expence was mere parſimony, compared with that which he now incurred: he ſubſcribed to the opera, and half a dozen concerts at different parts of the town; was a benefactor to ſeveral hoſpitals; purchaſed a collection of valuable pictures; took an houſe, and furniſhed it in a moſt magnificent taſte; laid in a large ſtock of French wines, and gave extravagant entertainments to his quality-friends; who, in return, loaded him with compliments, and inſiſted upon his making uſe of their intereſt and good-will.

CHAP. IV.

He is taken into the Protection of a great Man; ſets up for Member of Parliament; is diſappointed in his Expectation, and finds himſelf egregiouſly out-witted.

AMONG theſe profeſſed patrons, the greateſt part of whom Peregrine ſaw through, there was one great perſonage who ſeemed to ſupport with dignity the ſphere in which fortune had placed him. His behaviour to Pickle was not a ſeries of grinning complaiſance in a flat repetition of general expreſſions of friendſhip and regard. He demeaned himſelf with a ſeemingly honeſt reſerve, in point of profeſſion; his advances to Peregrine appeared to be the reſult of deliberation and experiment; he chid the young gentleman for his extravagance with the authority of a parent, and the ſincerity of a faſt friend; and having by gradual enquiries made himſelf acquainted with the ſtate of his private affairs, condemned

condemned his conduct with an air of candour and concern. He repreſented to him the folly and dangerous conſequences of the profligate life in which he had plunged himſelf: counſelled him with great warmth to ſell off his race-horſes which would otherwiſe inſenſibly eat him up; to retrench all ſuperfluous expence, which would only ſerve to expoſe him to the ridicule and ingratitude of thoſe who were benefited by it; to lay out his money upon ſecure mortgages, at good intereſt; and carry into execution his former deſign of ſtanding candidate for a borough, at the enſuing election for a new parliament; in which caſe this nobleman promiſed to aſſiſt him with his influence and advice; aſſuring him, that if he could once procure a ſeat in the houſe, he might look upon his fortune as already made.

Our adventurer perceived the wiſdom and ſanity of this advice, for which he made his acknowledgments to his generous monitor, proteſting that he would adhere to it in every particular, and immediately ſet about a reformation. He accordingly took cognizance of his moſt minute affairs; and after an exact ſcrutiny, gave his patron to underſtand, that, excluſive of his furniture, his fortune was reduced to fourteen thouſand three hundred and thirty pounds, in Bank and South-Sea annuities, over and above the garriſon and its appendages, which he reckoned at ſixty pounds a year. He therefore deſired, that as his lordſhip had been ſo kind as to favour him with his friendſhip and advice, he would extend his generoſity ſtill farther, by putting him in the way of making moſt advantage of his money. My lord ſaid, that for his own part he did not chuſe to meddle in money matters; that Mr. Pickle would find abundance of people ready to borrow it upon landed ſecurity; but that he ought to be extremely cautious in a tranſaction of ſuch conſequence; promiſing, at the ſame time, to employ his own ſteward in ſeeking out a mortgager to whom it might be ſafely lent.

This agent was accordingly ſet at work, and for a few days made a fruitleſs enquiry: ſo that the young gentleman

gentlemen was obliged to have recourfe to his own in-elligence, by which he got notice of feveral people of eputed credit, who offered him mortgages for the whole fum; but when he made a report of the particu-ars to his noble friend, his lordfhip ftarted fuch doubts nd objections relating to each, that he was deterred from entering into any engagements with the propofers; congratulating himfelf in the mean time, on his good ortune, in being favoured with the advice and direc-ion of fuch a fage counfellor. Neverthelefs he began o be impatient, after having unfuccefsfully confulted ll the money brokers and conveyancers about town, nd refolved to try the expedient of a publick adver-ifement. But he was perfuaded by my lord to poft-pone that experiment, until every other method fhould ve failed, becaufe it would attract the attention of the pettifoggers in London, who (though they might ot be able to over-reach) would infallibly harrafs and aze him out of all tranquillity.

It was on the back of this converfation that Pere-ine, chancing to meet the fteward near his lord's oufe, ftopped him in the ftreet, to give him an account f his bad luck; at which the other expreffed fome oncern, and rubbing his chin with his hand, in a muf-g pofture told Pickle, there was a thought juft come to his head, pointing out one way of doing his bufi-efs effectually. The youth, upon this intimation, egged he would accompany him to the next coffee-oufe, in which having chofen a private fituation, this rave manager gave him to underftand, that a part of y lord's eftate was mortgaged, in confequence of a ebt contracted by his grandfather, for provifion to the ounger children of the family; and that the equity of demption would be foreclofed in a few months, un-fs the burden could be difcharged.

'My lord,' faid he, 'has always lived in a fplendid anner, and notwithftanding his ample fortune, toge-er with the profits accruing from the pofts he enjoys, faves fo little money, that, upon this occafion, I know he

he will be obliged to borrow ten thouſand pounds, to make up the ſum that is requiſite to redeem the mortgage. Now, certain I am, that when his deſign comes to be known, he will be ſolicited on all hands by people deſirous of lending money upon ſuch undoubted ſecurity; and it is odds but he has already promiſed the preference to ſome particular acquaintance. However, as I know he has your intereſt very much at heart, I will (if you pleaſe) ſound his lordſhip upon the ſubject, and in a day or two give you notice of my ſucceſs.'

Peregrine, raviſhed with the proſpect of ſettling this affair ſo much to his ſatisfaction, thanked the ſteward for his friendly hint and undertaking, which he aſſured him ſhould be acknowledged by a more ſolid proof of his gratitude, provided the buſineſs could be brought to bear; and next day he was viſited by this kind manager, with the happy news of his lordſhip's having conſented to borrow ten thouſand pounds of his ſtock upon mortgage, at the intereſt of five per cent. This information he received as an inſtance of the ſingular eſteem of his noble patron; and the papers being immediately drawn and executed, the money was depoſited in the hands of the mortgager, who, in the hearing of the lender, laid ſtrong injunctions on the ſteward to pay the intereſt punctually at quarter-day.

The beſt part of our hero's fortune being thus happily depoſited, and the agent gratified with a preſent of fifty pieces, he began to put his retrenching ſcheme in execution; all his ſervants (Pipes excepted) were diſcharged, his chariot and running-horſes diſpoſed of, his houſe-keeping broke up, and his furniture ſold by auction; nay, the heat of his diſpoſition was as remarkable in this, as any other tranſaction of his life; for every ſtep of his ſaving project was taken with ſuch eagerneſs, and even precipitation, that moſt of his companions thought he was either ruined or mad. But he anſwered all their expoſtulations with a ſtring of prudent apophthegms, ſuch as, *The ſhorteſt follies are the beſt;—Better to retrench upon conviction than compulſion;*

ſion; and divers other wiſe maxims, ſeemingly the reſult of experience and philoſophick reflection. To ſuch a degree of enthuſiaſm did his preſent œconomy prevail, that he was actually ſeized with the deſire of amaſsing; and as he every day received propoſals, from thoſe brokers whom he had employed, about the diſpoſal of his caſh, he at length ventured fifteen hundred pounds upon bottomry, being tempted by the exceſsive premium.

But it muſt be obſerved, for the honour of our adventurer, that this reformation did not at all interfere with the good qualities of his heart. He was ſtill as friendly and benevolent as ever, though his liberality was more ſubject to the reſtraint of reaſon; and he might have juſtly pleaded, in vindication of his generoſity, that he retrenched the ſuperfluities in his own way of living, in order to preſerve the power of aſſiſting his fellow-creatures in diſtreſs. Numberleſs were the objects to which he extended his charity in private. Indeed, he exerted this virtue in ſecret, not only on account of avoiding the charge of oſtentation, but alſo becauſe he was aſhamed of being detected in ſuch an aukward unfaſhionable practice, by the cenſorious obſervers of this humane generation. In this particular, he ſeemed to confound the ideas of virtue and vice; for he did good as other people do evil, by ſtealth; and was ſo capricious in point of behaviour, that frequently, in publick, he wagged his tongue in ſatirical animadverſions upon that poverty which his hand had in private relieved. Yet, far from ſhunning the acquaintance, or diſcouraging the ſolicitation, of thoſe who he thought wanted his aſſiſtance, he was always acceſſible, open, and complacent to them, even when the haughtineſs of his temper kept his ſuperiors at a diſtance, and often ſaved a modeſt man the anguiſh and confuſion of declaring himſelf, by penetrating into his neceſſity, and anticipating his requeſt, in a frank offer of his purſe and friendſhip.

Not that he practiſed this beneficence to all the needy of his acquaintance, without diſtinction; there is always a ſet of idle, profligate fellows, who having

ſquandered

ſquandered away their own fortunes, and conquered al ſenſe of honour and ſhame, maintain themſelves b borrowing from thoſe who have not yet finiſhed th ſame career, and want reſolution to reſiſt their impor tunate demands. To theſe he was always inflexible though he could not abſolutely detach himſelf fro their company, becauſe, by dint of effrontery, and ſuc of their original connections as they have been able to re tain, they find admiſſion to all places of faſhionable reſort

Several unſucceſsful attacks had been made upon hi pocket by beggars of this claſs. One of the moſt ar ful of them, having one day joined him in the Ma and made the uſual obſervation on the weather, dam ed all the fogs of London, and began a diſſertation o the difference of air, preferring that of the country which he was born to any climate under the ſu 'Was you ever in Glouceſterſhire?' (ſaid he to Pe grine.) Who replying in the negative, he thus we on: 'I have got a houſe there, where I ſhall be glad ſee you. Let us go down together, during the Ea holidays; I can promiſe you good country fare a wholeſome exerciſe; for I have every thing wit myſelf, and as good a pack of fox hounds as any in t three kingdoms. I ſha'n't pretend to expatiate up the elegance of the houſe, which to be ſure is an building; and theſe, you know, are generally co and not very convenient. But, curſe the houſe! dirty acres about it are the thing; and a damn'd parcel they are, to be ſure—If my old grandmother dead—ſhe can't live another ſeaſon, for ſhe's turned fourſcore, and quite wore out: nay, as for that mat I believe I have got a letter in my pocket, giving account of her being deſpaired of by the doctors. me ſee!—No, d—n it! I left it at home, in the poc of another coat.'

Pickle, who from the beginning of this harangue it's tendency, ſeemed to yield the moſt ſerious atten to what he ſaid; breaking in upon it, every now then, with the interjections, *Hum! Ha! The De*

and ſeveral civil queſtions, from which the other conceived happy omens of ſucceſs; till perceiving they had advanced as far as the paſſage into St. James's, the miſchievous youth interrupted him all at once, ſaying—'I ſee you are for the end of the walk; this is my way.' With theſe words he took his leave of the saunterer, who would have delayed his retreat, by calling to him aloud, that he had not yet deſcribed the ſituation of his caſtle. But Peregrine, without ſtopping, anſwered in the ſame tone—' Another time will do as well!' and in a moment diſappeared, leaving the projector very much mortified with his diſappointment; for his intention was to cloſe the deſcription with a demand of twenty pieces, to be repaid out of the firſt remittance he ſhould receive from his eſtate.

It would have been well for our hero, had he always acted with the ſame circumſpection; but he had his unguarded moments, in which he fell a prey to the unſuſpecting integrity of his own heart. There was a perſon among the number of his acquaintances, whoſe converſation he particularly reliſhed, becauſe it was frank, agreeable, and fraught with many ſenſible obſervations, upon the craft and treachery of mankind. This gentleman had made a ſhift to diſcuſs a very genteel fortune, though it was ſpent with taſte and reputation, and now he was reduced to his ſhifts for the maintenance of his family, which conſiſted of a wife and child. Not that he was deſtitute of the neceſſaries of life, being comfortably ſupplied by the bounty of his friends; but this was a proviſion not at all ſuited to his inclination; and he had endeavoured, by divers unſucceſsful ſchemes, to retrieve his former independency.

Peregrine happened one evening to be ſitting alone in a coffee-houſe, where he overheard a converſation between this ſchemer and another gentleman, touching an affair that engaged his attention. The ſtranger had been left truſtee for fifteen hundred pounds bequeathed to the other's daughter by an aunt, and was ſtrongly ſolicited to pay the money to the child's father,

who assured him, he had then an opportunity to lay it out in such a manner as would greatly conduce to the advantage of his family. The trustee reminded him of the nature of his charge which made him accountable for the money, until the child should have attained the age of eighteen; but at the same time gave him to understand, that if he could procure such securities as would indemnify him from the consequences, he would forthwith pay the legacy into his hands. To this proposal the father replied, that it was not to be supposed he would risk the fortune of his only child, upon an idle scheme, or precarious issue: and therefore he thought it reasonable, that he should have the use of it in the mean time; and that, as to security, he was loth to trouble any of his friends about an affair which might be compromised without their interposition; observing that he would not look upon his condescension as a favour, if obtained by a security, on which he could borrow the same sum from any usurer in town.

After much importunity on one side, and evasion on the other, the monied gentleman told him, that though he would not surrender the sum deposited in his hands for the use of his daughter, he would lend him what he should have occasion for in the mean time: and if, upon her being of age, he should be able to obtain her concurrence, the money should be placed to her account; provided he could find any person of credit, who would join with him in a bond for the assurance of the lender. This proviso was an obstruction which the other would not have been able to surmount without great difficulty, had not his cause been espoused by our hero, who thought it was a pity a man of honour and understanding should suffer in his principal concerns on such a paltry consideration. He therefore, presuming on his acquaintance, interposed in the conversation as a friend who interested himself in the affair; and being fully informed of the particulars, offered himself as a security for the lender.

This gentleman being a stranger to Peregrine,

was next day made acquainted with his funds; and, without farther ſcruple, accommodated his friend with one thouſand pounds, for which he took their bond, payable in ſix months, though he proteſted that the money ſhould never be demanded, until the infant ſhould be of age, unleſs ſome accident ſhould happen which he could not then foreſee. Pickle believed this declaration ſincere, becauſe he could have no intereſt in diſſembling: but what he chiefly depended upon, for his own ſecurity, was the integrity and confidence of the borrower, who aſſured him, that happen what would, he ſhould be able to ſtand between him and all danger; the nature of this plan being ſuch, as would infallibly treble the ſum in a very few months.

In a little time after this tranſaction, writs being iſſued out for electing a new parliament, our adventurer, by the advice of his patron, went into the country, in order to canvaſs for a borough, and lined his pockets with a competent ſhare of bank notes for the occaſion. But, in this project, he unfortunately happened to interfere with the intereſt of a great family in the oppoſition, who for a long ſeries of years had made members for that place; and were now ſo much offended at the intruſion of our young gentleman, that they threatened to ſpend ten thouſand pounds in fruſtrating his deſign. This menace was no other than an incitement to Peregrine, who confided ſo much in his influence and addreſs, that he verily believed he ſhould be able to baffle his grace, even in his own territories. By that victory he hoped to eſtabliſh his reputation and intereſt with the miniſter, who, through the recommendation of his noble friend, countenanced his cauſe, and would have been very well pleaſed to ſee one of his greateſt enemies ſuffer ſuch a diſagreeable overthrow, which would have, moreover, in a great meaſure ſhaken his credit with his faction.

Our hero, intoxicated with the ideas of pride and ambition, put all his talents to the teſt in the execution of this project. He ſpared no expence in treating the

 electors;

electors; but finding himſelf rivalled, in this reſpect, by his competitor, who was powerfully ſupported, he had recourſe to thoſe qualifications in which he thought himſelf ſuperior. He made balls for the ladies, viſited the matrons of the corporation, adapted himſelf to their various humours with ſurpriſing facility, drank with thoſe who loved a cheriſhing cup in private, made love to the amorous, prayed with the religious, goſſipped with thoſe who delighted in ſcandal, and with great ſagacity contrived agreeable preſents to them all. This was the moſt effectual method of engaging ſuch electors as were under the influence of their wives. As for the reſt, he aſſailed them in their own way, ſetting whole hogſheads of wine and beer abroach for the benefit of all comers; and into thoſe ſordid hearts that liquor would not open, he found means to convey himſelf by the help of a golden key.

While he thus exerted himſelf, his antagoniſt was not idle; his age and infirmities would not permit him to enter perſonally into their parties; but his ſteward and adherents beſtirred themſelves with great induſtry and perſeverance. The market for votes ran ſo high that Pickle's ready-money was exhauſted before the day of election; and he was obliged to write to his patron an account of the dilemma to which he was reduced, intreating him to take ſuch ſpeedy meaſures, as would enable him to finiſh the buſineſs which he had ſo happily begun.

This nobleman communicated the circumſtances of the caſe to the miniſter, and in a day or two our candidate found credit with the receiver-general of the county, who lent him twelve hundred pounds on his perſonal note, payable on demand. By means of this new ſupply, he managed matters ſo ſucceſsfully, that an evident majority of votes was ſecured in his intereſt, and nothing could have obſtructed his election, had not the noble peer, who ſet up his competitor, in order to avoid the ſhame and mortification of being foiled in his own borough, offered to compromiſe the affair with his

honour

honour, by giving up two members in another place, provided the oppoſition ſhould ceaſe in his own corporation. This propoſal was greedily embraced. On the eve of election, Peregrine received an intimation from his patron, deſiring him to quit his pretenſions, on pain of his and the miniſter's diſpleaſure; and promiſing that he ſhould be elected for another place.

No other diſappointment in life could have given him ſuch chagrin as he felt at the receipt of this tantalizing order, by which the cup of ſucceſs was ſnatched from his lip, and all the vanity of his ambitious hope humbled in the duſt. He curſed the whole chain of his court connections: inveighed with great animoſity againſt the raſcally ſcheme of politicks, to which he was ſacrified; and in concluſion ſwore, he would not give up the fruits of his own addreſs for the pleaſure of any miniſter upon earth. This laudable reſolution, however, was rendered ineffectual by his friend the receiver-general, who was bearer of the meſſage, and (after having, in vain, endeavoured to perſuade him to ſubmiſſion) fairly arreſted him upon the ſpot for the money he had advanced; this expedient being performed by virtue of a writ which he had been adviſed to take out, in caſe the young man ſhould prove refractory.

The reader, who by this time muſt be pretty well acquainted with the diſpoſition of our adventurer, may eaſily conceive how he reliſhed this adventure. At firſt, all the faculties of his ſoul were ſwallowed up in aſtoniſhment and indignation; and ſome minutes elapſed before his nerves would obey the impulſe of his rage, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch an application to the temples of the plaintiff, as laid him ſprawling on the floor. This aſſault, which was committed in a tavern whither he had been purpoſely decoyed, attracted the regard of the bailiff and his followers, who, to the number of four, ruſhed upon him at once, in order to overpower him; but his wrath inſpired him with ſuch additional ſtrength and agility, that he diſengaged him-

ſelf from them in a trice, and ſeizing a poker, which was the firſt weapon that preſented itſelf to his hand, exerciſed it upon their ſkulls with incredible dexterity and execution. The officer himſelf, who had been the firſt that preſumed to lay violent hands upon him, felt the firſt effects of his fury, in a blow upon his jaws, in conſequence of which he loſt three of his teeth, and fell athwart the body of the receiver, with which he formed the figure of a St. Andrew's croſs: one of the myrmidons ſeeing the fate of his chief, would not venture to attack the victor in front, but wheeling to one ſide, made an attempt upon him in flank, and was received obliquely by our hero's left-hand and foot, ſo maſterly diſpoſed to the right-ſide of his leg, and the left-ſide of his neck, that he bolted head-foremoſt into the chimney, where his chin was encountered by the grate, which in a moment ſeared him to the bone. The reſt of the detachment did not think proper to maintain the diſpute, but evacuating the room with great expedition, locked the door on the out-ſide, and bellowed aloud to the receiver's ſervants, beſeeching them to come to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, who was in danger of his life.

Meanwhile, this gentleman having recollected himſelf, demanded a parley; which having with difficulty obtained of our incenſed candidate, in conſequence of the moſt ſubmiſſive application, he complained grievouſly of the young gentleman's intemperance and heat of diſpoſition, and very calmly repreſented the danger of his raſhneſs and indiſcretion. He told him, that nothing could be more outrageous or idle, than the reſiſtance he had made againſt the laws of his country, becauſe he would find it impracticable to withſtand the whole executive power of the county, which he could eaſily raiſe to apprehend and ſecure him; that over and above the diſgrace that would accrue to him from this imprudent conduct, he would knock his own intereſt on the head, by diſobliging his friends in the adminiſtration, who were, to his knowledge, at preſent very

well

well disposed to do him service; that, for his own part, what he had done was by the express order of his superiors, and not out of any desire of distressing him; and that, far from being his enemy, notwithstanding the shocking insult he had sustained, he was ready to withdraw the writ, provided he would listen to any reasonable terms of accommodation.

Peregrine, who was not more prone to anger than open to conviction, being appeased by his condescension, moved by his arguments, and chid by his own reflection, for what he had done in the precipitation of his wrath, began to give ear to his remonstrances; and the bailiffs being ordered to withdraw, they entered into a conference, the result of which was, our adventurer's immediate departure for London: so that next day his competitor was unanimously chosen, because nobody appeared to oppose his election.

The discontented Pickle, on his arrival in town, went directly to the house of his patron; to whom, in the anguish of his disappointment, he bitterly complained of the treatment he had received, by which, besides the disgrace of his overthrow, he was no less than two thousand pounds out of pocket, exclusive of the debt for which he stood engaged to the receiver. His lordship, who was prepared for this expostulation, on his knowledge of the young man's impetuous temper, answered all the articles of his charge with great deliberation; giving him to understand the motives that induced the minister to quit his interest in that borough, and soothing him with assurances that his loss would be amply rewarded by his honour, to whom he was next day introduced by this nobleman, in the warmest style of recommendation. The minister, who was a pattern of complaisance, received him with the most engaging affability; thanked him very kindly for his endeavours to support and strengthen the interest of the administration; and faithfully promised to lay hold on the first opportunity to express the sense he had of his zeal and attachment; desiring to see him often at his

his levee, that in the multiplicity of bufinefs he might not be in danger of forgetting his fervices and defert.

CHAP. V.

Peregrine commences Minifter's Dependent; meets by Accident with Mrs. Gauntlet; and defcends gradually in the Condition of Life.

THIS reception, favourable as it was, did not pleafe Peregrine, who had too much difcernment to be cajoled with general promifes, at a time when he thought himfelf intitled to the moft particular affurance. He accordingly fignified his difguft to his introductor; giving him to underftand, that he laid his account with being chofen reprefentative of one of thofe boroughs for which he had been facrificed. His lordfhip agreed to the reafonablenefs of his expectation; obferving, however, that he could not fuppofe the minifter would enter upon bufinefs with him on his firft vifit; and that it would be time enough at his next audience to communicate his demand.

Notwithftanding this remonftrance, our hero continued to indulge his fufpicion and chagrin, and even made a point of it with his patron, that his lordfhip fhould next day make application in his behalf, left the two feats fhould be filled up, on pretence of his inclinations being unknown. Thus importuned, my lord went to his principal, and returned with an anfwer, importing that his honour was extremely forry that Mr. Pickle had not fignified his requeft before the boroughs in queftion were promifed to two gentlemen, whom he could not now difappoint with any regard to his own credit or intereft; but as feveral perfons who would be chofen were, to his certain knowledge, very aged and infirm, he did not doubt that there would be plenty of vacant feats in a very fhort time, and then the young gentleman might depend upon his friendfhip.

Peregrine was fo much irritated at this intimation, that in the firft tranfports of his anger, he forgot the refpect he owed to his friend, and in his prefence inveighed againft the minifter, as a perfon devoid of gratitude

titude and candour; protesting, that if ever an opportunity should offer itself, he would spend the whole remains of his fortune in opposing his measures. The nobleman having given him time to exhaust the impetuosity of his passion, rebuked him very calmly for his disrespectful expressions, which were equally injurious and indiscreet; assured him, that this project of revenge, if ever put in execution, would redound to his own prejudice and confusion; and advised him to cultivate and improve, with patience and assiduity, the footing he had already obtained in the minister's good graces.

Our hero, convinced of the truth, though not satisfied with the occasion of his admonitions, took his leave in a fit of sullen discontent, and began to ruminate upon the shattered posture of his affairs. All that now remained of the ample fortune he had inherited, was the sum he had deposited in his lordship's hands, together with fifteen hundred pounds he had ventured on bottomry, and the garrison, which he had left for the use and accommodation of the lieutenant; and on the *per contra* side of his account, he was debtor for the supply he had received from the receiver-general, and the money for which he was bound in behalf of his friend: so that he found himself, for the first time of his life, very much embarrassed in his circumstances; for, of the first half year's interest of his ten thousand, which was punctually paid, he had but fourscore pounds in bank, without any prospect of a farther supply till the other term, which was at the distance of four long months. He seriously reflected upon the uncertainty of human affairs; the ship with his fifteen hundred pounds might be lost; the gentleman for whom he was security, might miscarry in this, as well as in his former projects; and the minister might one day, through policy or displeasure, expose him to the mercy of his dependent, who was in possession of his notes.

These suggestions did not at all contribute to the

eaſe of our adventurer's mind, already ruffled by his diſappointment. He curſed his own folly and extravagance, by which he was reduced to ſuch an uncomfortable ſituation. He compared his own conduct with that of ſome young gentlemen of his acquaintance, who while he was ſquandering away the beſt part of his inheritance, had improved their fortunes, ſtrengthened their intereſt, and increaſed their reputation. He was abandoned by his gaiety and good-humour; his countenance gradually contracted itſelf into a repreſentation of ſeverity and care; he dropped all his amuſements and the companions of his pleaſure, and turned his whole attention to the miniſter, at whoſe levee he never failed to appear.

While he thus laboured in the wheel of dependence, with all that mortification which a youth of his pride and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel from ſuch a diſagreeable neceſſity, he one day heard himſelf called by name as he croſſed the Park, and turning, perceived the wife of Captain Gauntlet, with another lady. He no ſooner recognized the kind Sophy, than he accoſted her with his wonted civility of friendſhip; but his former ſprightly air was metamorphoſed into ſuch auſterity, or rather dejection of feature, that ſhe could ſcarce believe her own eyes; and in her aſtoniſhment, 'Is it poſſible,' ſaid ſhe, 'that the gay Mr. Pickle, ſhould be ſo much altered in ſuch a ſhort ſpace of time!' He made no other reply to this exclamation but by a languid ſmile; and aſked how long ſhe had been in town: obſerving, that he would have paid his compliments to her at her own lodgings, had he been favoured with the leaſt intimation of her arrival. After having thanked him for his politeneſs, ſhe told him it was not owing to any abatement of her friendſhip and eſteem for him that ſhe had omitted to give him that notice; but his abrupt departure from Windſor, and the manner in which he quitted Mr. Gauntlet, had given her juſt grounds to believe, that they had incurred his diſpleaſure; which ſuſpicion was reinforced by his long ſilence

 and

and neglect from that period to the present time. She observed it was still farther confirmed, by his forbearing to enquire for Emilia and her brother. 'Judge, then,' said she, 'if I had any reason to believe that you would be pleased to hear that I was in town. However, I will not detain you at present, because you seem to be engaged about some particular business; but if you will favour me with your company at breakfast to-morrow, I shall be much pleased, and honoured to boot, by the visit.' So saying, she gave him a direction to her lodgings; and he took his leave, with a faithful promise of seeing her at the appointed time.

He was very much affected with this advance of Sophy, which he considered as an instance of her uncommon sweetness of temper; he felt strange longings of returning friendship towards Godfrey; and the remembrance of Emilia melted his heart, already softened with grief and mortification. Next day, he did not neglect his engagement, and had the pleasure of enjoying a long conversation with this sensible young lady, who gave him to understand, that her husband was with his regiment; and presented to him a fine boy, the first fruits of their love, whom they had christened by the name of Peregrine, in memory of the friendship which had subsisted between Godfrey and our youth.

This proof of their regard, notwithstanding the interruption in their correspondence, made a deep impression upon the mind of our adventurer, who having made the warmest acknowledgments for this undeserved mark of respect, took the child in his arms, and almost devoured him with kisses, protesting before God, that he should always consider him with the tenderness of a parent. This was the highest compliment he could pay to the gentle Sophy, who again kindly chid him for his disdainful and precipitate retreat immediately after her marriage; and expressed an earnest desire of seeing him and the captain reconciled. He assured her nothing could give him greater satisfaction than such an event, to which he would contribute all that lay in his

power, though he could not help looking upon himſelf as injured by Captain Gauntlet's behaviour, which denoted a ſuſpicion of his honour, as well as contempt for his underſtanding. The lady undertook for the conceſſion of her huſband, who (ſhe told him) had been extremely ſorry for his own heat, after Mr. Pickle's departure, and would have followed him to the garriſon, in order to ſolicit his forgiveneſs, had he not been reſtrained by certain punctilios, occaſioned by ſome acrimonious expreſſions that dropped from Peregrine at the inn.

After having cleared up this miſunderſtanding, ſhe proceeded to give an account of Emilia, whoſe behaviour, at that juncture, plainly indicated a continuance of affection for her firſt lover; and deſired, that he would give her full powers to bring that matter alſo to an accommodation: ' For I am not more certain of my own exiſtence,' ſaid ſhe, ' than that you are ſtill in poſſeſſion of my ſiſter's heart.' At this declaration the tear ſtarted in his eye: but he ſhook his head, and declined her good offices, wiſhing that the young lady might be much more happy than ever he ſhould be able to make her.

Mrs. Gauntlet, confounded at theſe expreſſions, and moved by the deſponding manner in which they were delivered, begged to know if any new obſtacle was raiſed by ſome late change in his ſentiments or ſituation; and he, in order to avoid a painful explanation, told her, that he had long deſpaired of being able to vanquiſh Emilia's reſentment, and for that reaſon quitted the purſuit, which he would never renew, howſoever his heart might ſuffer by that reſolution; though he took Heaven to witneſs, that his love, eſteem, and admiration of her, were not in the leaſt impaired: but the true motive of his laying aſide his deſign, was the conſciouſneſs of his decayed fortune; which, by adding to the ſenſibility of his pride, increaſed the horror of another repulſe. She expreſſed her concern for this determination, both on his own account, and in behalf of

Emilia,

Emilia, whose happiness (in her opinien) depended upon his constancy and affection; and she would have questioned him more minutely about the state of his affairs, had not he discouraged the enquiry, by seeking to introduce another subject of conversation.

After mutual protestations of friendship and regard, he promised to visit her often during her residence in town; and took his leave in a strange perplexity of mind, occasioned by the images of love intruding upon the remonstrances of carking care. He had some time ago forsaken those extravagant companions with whom he had rioted in the hey-day of his fortune, and began to consort with a graver and more sober species of acquaintance; but he now found himself disabled from cultivating the society of these also, who were men of ample estates, and liberal dispositions; in consequence of which, their parties were too expensive for the consumptive state of his finances; so that he was obliged to descend to another degree, and mingle with a set of old-bachelors and younger brothers, who subsisted on slender annuities, or what is called a bare competency in the publick funds. This association was composed of second-hand politicians and minor criticks, who in the forenoon saunter in the Mall, or lounge at shows of pictures, appear in the drawing-room once or twice a week, dine at an ordinary, decide disputes in a coffee-house with an air of superior intelligence, frequent the pit of the play-house, and once in a month spend an evening with some noted actor, whose remarkable sayings they repeat for the entertainment of their ordinary friends.

After all, he found something comfortable enough in the company of these gentlemen, who never interested his passions to any violence of transport, nor teazed him with impertinent curiosity about his private affairs: for though many of them had maintained a very long, close, and friendly correspondence with each other, they never dreamed of enquiring into particular concerns; and if one of the two who were most inti-

mately connected, had been asked how the other made a shift to live, he would have answered, with great truth, ‘ Really, that is more than I know.’ Notwithstanding this phlegmatick indifference, which is of the true English production, they were all inoffensive, good-natured people, who loved a joke and a song, delighted in telling a merry story, and prided themselves in the art of catering, especially in the articles of fish, venison, and wild-fowl.

Our young gentleman was not received among them on the footing of a common member, who makes interest for his admission; he was courted as a person of superior genius and importance, and his compliance looked upon as an honour to the society. This their idea of his pre-eminence was supported by his conversation, which, while it was more liberal and learned than that to which they had been accustomed, was tinctured with an assuming air, so agreeably diffused, that, instead of producing aversion, it commanded respect. They not only appealed to him in all doubts relating to foreign parts, to which one and all of them were strangers, but also consulted his knowledge in history and divinity, which were frequently the topicks of their debates; and in poetry of all kinds, he decided with such magisterial authority, as even weighed against the opinions of the players themselves. The variety of characters he had seen and observed, and the high spheres of life in which he had so lately moved, furnished him with a thousand entertaining anecdotes. When he became a little familiarized to his disappointments, so that his natural vivacity began to revive, he flashed among them in such a number of bright sallies, as struck them with admiration, and constituted himself a classick in wit: insomuch, that they began to retail his remnants, and even invited some particular friends to come and hear him hold forth. One of the players, who had for many years strutted about the taverns in the neighbourhood of Covent Garden as the Grand Turk of wit and humour, began to find his admirers melt away; and a

certain petulant phyſician, who had ſhone at almoſt all the Port-clubs in that end of the town, was actually obliged to import his talents into the city, where he has now happily taken root.

Nor was this acceſs to be wondered at, if we conſider that, over and above his natural genius and education, our adventurer ſtill had the opportunity of knowing every thing which happened among the great, by means of his friend Cadwallader, with whom he ſtill maintained his former intimacy, though it was now chequered with many occaſional tifts, owing to the ſarcaſtick remonſtrances of the miſanthrope, who diſapproved of thoſe ſchemes which miſcarried with Peregrine, and now took unſeaſonable methods of valuing himſelf upon his own foreſight: nay, he was between whiles like a raven croaking preſages of more ill-luck from the deceit of the miniſter, the diſſimulation of his patron, the folly of the projector for whom he was bound, the uncertainty of the ſeas, and the villainy of thoſe with whom he had entruſted his caſh; for Crabtree ſaw and conſidered every thing through a perſpective of ſpleen, that always reflected the worſt ſide of human nature.

For theſe reaſons our young gentleman began to be diſguſted, at certain intervals, with the character of this old man, whom he now thought a moroſe cynick, not ſo much incenſed againſt the follies and vices of mankind, as delighted with the diſtreſs of his fellow-creatures. Thus he put the moſt unfavourable conſtruction on the principles of his friend, becauſe he found himſelf juſtly fallen under the laſh of his animadverſion. This ſelf-accuſation very often diſſolves the cloſeſt friendſhip: a man, conſcious of his own indiſcretion, is implacably offended at the rectitude of his companion's conduct, which he conſiders as an inſult upon his failings, never to be forgiven, even though he has not taſted the bitterneſs of reproof, which no ſinner can commodiouſly digeſt. The friendſhip, therefore, ſubſiſting between Crabtree and Pickle, had of late ſuf-

fered feveral fymptomatick fhocks that feemed to prognofticate a total diffolution; a great deal of fmart dialogue had paffed in their private converfations, and the fenior began to repent of having placed his confidence in fuch an imprudent, head-ftrong, ungovernable youth.

It was in fuch paroxyfms of difpleafure that he prophefied misfortune to Peregrine; and even told him one morning, that he had dreamed of the fhip-wreck of the two Eaft Indiamen, on board of which he had hazarded his money. But this was no other than a falfe vifion; for in a few weeks one of them arrived at her moorings in the river, and he received a thoufand in lieu of eight hundred pounds, which he had lent upon bond to one of the mates. At the fame time he was informed, that othe other fhip in which he was concerned, had, in all probability, loft her paffage for the feafon, by being unable to weather the Cape. He was not at all concerned at that piece of news, knowing, that the longer he fhould lie out of his money, he would have the more intereft to receive; and finding his prefent difficulties removed by this fupply, his heart began to dilate, and his countenance to refume it's former alacrity.

This ftate of exultation, however, was foon interrupted by a fmall accident, which he could not forefee: he was vifited one morning by the perfon who had lent his friend a thoufand pounds on his fecurity, and given to underftand, that the borrower had abfconded, in confequence of a difappointment, by which he had loft the whole fum, and all hopes of retrieving it; fo that our hero was now liable for the debt, which he befought him to difcharge according to the bond, that he (the lender) might not fuffer by his humanity. It may be eafily conceived that Peregrine did not receive this intelligence in cold blood. He curfed his own imprudence in contracting fuch engagements with an adventurer whom he did not fufficiently know. They exclaimed againft the treachery of the projector; and having for fome time indulged his refentment in threats and

and imprecations, enquired into the nature of the ſcheme which had miſcarried.

The lender, who had informed himſelf of the whole affair, gratified his curioſity in this particular, by telling him that the fugitive had been cajoled by a certain knight of the poſt, who undertook to manage the thouſand pounds in ſuch a manner as would in a very little time, make him perfectly independent; and thus he delineated the plan: ‘ One half of the ſum,’ ſaid he, ‘ ſhall be laid out in jewels, which I will pawn to certain perſons of credit and fortune, who lend money upon ſuch pledges at an exorbitant intereſt. The other ſhall be kept for relieving them, ſo that they may be again depoſited with a ſecond ſet of thoſe honourable uſurers; and when they ſhall have been circulated in this manner through a variety of hands, we will extort money from each of the pawn-brokers, by threatening them with a publick proſecution, for exacting illegal intereſt; and I know that they will bleed freely, rather than be expoſed to the infamy attending ſuch an accuſation.’ The ſcheme was feaſible, and though not very honourable, made ſuch an impreſſion upon the needy borrower, that he aſſented to the propoſal; and, by our hero's credit, the money was raiſed. The jewels were accordingly purchaſed, pawned, and relieved, and re-pledged by the agent, who undertook to manage the whole affair; and ſo judiciouſly was the project executed, that he could have eaſily proved each lender guilty of the charge. Having thus far ſucceſsfully tranſacted the buſineſs, this faithful agent viſited them ſeverally on his own account, to give them intimation, that his employer intended to ſue them on the ſtatute of uſury; upon which, every one for himſelf bribed the informer to withdraw his evidence, by which alone he could be convicted; and having received theſe gratifications, he had thought proper to retreat into France with the whole booty, including the original thouſand that put them in motion. In conſequence of this decampment, the borrower had withdrawn him-

fels; ſo that the lender was obliged to have recourſe to his ſecurity.

This was a very mortifying account to our young gentleman, who in vain reminded the narrator of his promiſe, importing, that he would not demand the money, until he ſhould be called to an account by his ward; and obſerved, that long before that period, the fugitive might appear and diſcharge the debt. But the other was deaf to theſe remonſtrances; alledging, that his promiſe was proviſional, on the ſuppoſition that the borrower would deal candidly and fairly; that he had forfeited all title to his friendſhip and truſt, by the ſcandalous ſcheme in which he had embarked; and that his treacherous flight from his ſecurity was no proof of his honeſty and intended return; but on the contrary, a warning by which he (the lender) was taught to take care of himſelf. He therefore inſiſted upon his being indemnified immediately, on pain of letting the law take it's courſe; and Peregrine was actually obliged to part with the whole ſum he had ſo lately received. But this payment was not made without extreme reluctance, indignation, and denunciation of eternal war againſt the abſconder and the rigid creditor, betwixt whom he ſuſpected ſome colluſion.

CHAP. VI.

Cadwallader acts the Part of a Comforter to his Friend; and in his Turn is conſoled by Peregrine, who begins to find himſelf a moſt egregious Dupe.

THIS new misfortune, which he juſtly charged to the account of his own folly, recalled his chagrin; and though he endeavoured with all his might to conceal the affair from the knowledge of Cadwallader, that prying obſerver perceived his countenance overcaſt. The projector's ſudden diſappearance alarming his ſuſpicion, he managed his enquiries with ſo much art, that in a few days he made himſelf acquainted with every particular of the tranſaction, and reſolved to gratify his ſpleen at the expence of the impatient dupe. With this view, he took an opportunity to accoſt him with

with a very ſerious air, ſaying, a friend of his had immediate occaſion for a thouſand pounds, and as Peregrine had the exact ſum lying by him, he would take it as a great favour, if he would part with it for a few months on undoubted ſecurity. Had Pickle known the true motive of this demand, he would in all likelihood have made a very diſagreeable anſwer; but Crabtree had wrapt himſelf up ſo ſecurely in the diſſimulation of his features, that the youth could not poſſibly penetrate into his intention; and in the moſt galling ſuſpence replied, that the money was otherwiſe engaged. The miſanthrope, not contented with this irritation, aſſumed the prerogative of a friend, and queſtioned him ſo minutely about the diſpoſal of the caſh, that after numberleſs evaſions, which coſt him a world of torture to invent, he could contain his vexation no longer, but exclaimed in a rage, 'Damn your impertinence! 'tis gone to the devil, and that's enough!'—'Thereafter as it may be,' ſaid the tormentor, with a moſt provoking indifference of aſpect, 'I ſhould be glad to know upon what footing; for I ſuppoſe you have ſome expectation of advantage from that quarter.'—''Sdeath, Sir!' cried the impatient youth, 'if I had any expectation from hell, I would make intereſt with you, for I believe from my ſoul, you are one of it's moſt favoured miniſters upon earth.' With theſe words, he flung out of the room, leaving Cadwallader very well ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had beſtowed.

Peregrine having cooled himſelf with a ſolitary walk in the Park, during which the violence of his choler gradually evaporated, and his reflection was called to a ſerious deliberation upon the poſture of his affairs, he reſolved to redouble his diligence and importunity with his patron and the miniſter, in order to obtain ſome ſinecure, which would indemnify him for the damage he had ſuſtained on their account. He accordingly went to his lordſhip, and ſignified his demand, after having told him, that he had ſuffered ſeveral freſh

loſſes,

loſſes, which rendered an immediate proviſion of that ſort neceſſary to his credit and ſubſiſtence.

His noble friend commended him for the regard he manifeſted for his own intereſt, which he conſidered as a proof of his being at laſt detached from the careleſs inadvertency of youth; he approved of his demand, which he aſſured him ſhould be faithfully tranſmitted to the miniſter, and backed with all his influence; and encouraged his hope, by obſerving, that ſome profitable places were at that time vacant, and, ſo far as he knew, unengaged.

This converſation helped to reſtore the tranquillity of Pickle's breaſt, though he ſtill harboured reſentment againſt Cadwallader, on account of the laſt inſult; and on the inſtant he formed a plan of revenge. He knew the miſanthrope's remittances from his eſtate in the country had been of late very ſcanty, in conſequence of repairs and bankruptcies among his tenants: ſo that, in ſpite of all his frugality, he had been but barely able to maintain his credit, and even that was engaged on the ſtrength of his running-rent. Being therefore intimately acquainted with the particulars of his fortune, he wrote a letter to Crabtree, ſubſcribed with the name of his principal farmer's wife, importing, that her huſband being lately dead, and the greateſt part of her cattle deſtroyed by the infectious diſtemper, ſhe found herſelf utterly incapable of paying the rent which was due, or even of keeping the farm, unleſs he would, out of his great goodneſs, be pleaſed to give her ſome aſſiſtance, and allow her to ſit free for a twelvemonth to come. This intimation he found means to convey by poſt from a market-town adjoining to the farm, directed in the uſual ſtyle to the cynick, who ſeeing it ſtamped with the known marks, could not poſſibly ſuſpect any impoſition.

Hacknied as he was in the ways of life, and ſteeled with his boaſted ſtoiciſm, this epiſtle threw him into ſuch an agony of vexation, that a double proportion of ſouring was viſible in his aſpect, when he was viſited

by

by the author, who having obſerved and followed the poſtman at a proper diſtance, introduced a converſation upon his own diſappointments, in which, among other circumſtances of his own ill luck, he told him, that his patron's ſteward had deſired to be excuſed from paying the laſt quarter of his intereſt preciſely at the appointed term; for which reaſon, he ſhould be utterly void of caſh; and therefore requeſted that Crabtree would accommodate him with an hundred pieces out of his next remittance from the country.

This demand galled and perplexed the old man to ſuch a degree, that the muſcles of his face aſſumed a contraction peculiarly virulent, and exhibited the character of Diogenes with a moſt lively expreſſion; he knew that a confeſſion of his true ſituation would furniſh Pickle with an opportunity to make repriſals upon him, with intolerable triumph; and that, by a downright refuſal to ſupply his wants, he would for ever forfeit his friendſhip and eſteem, and might provoke him to take ample vengeance for his ſordid behaviour, by expoſing him, in his native colours, to the reſentment of thoſe whom he had ſo long deceived. Theſe conſiderations kept him ſome time in a moſt rancorous ſtate of ſuſpence; which Peregrine affected to miſinterpret, by bidding him freely declare his ſuſpicion, if he did not think it ſafe to comply with his requeſt, and he would make ſhift elſewhere.

This ſeeming miſconſtruction increaſed the torture of the miſanthrope, who with the utmoſt irritation of feature, 'Oons!' cried he, 'what villainy have you noted in my conduct, that you treat me like a raſcally uſurer?' Peregrine very gravely replied, that the queſtion needed no anſwer; 'for,' ſaid he, 'had I conſidered you as an uſurer, I would have come with a ſecurity under my arm: but, all evaſion apart, will you ſtead me? will you pleaſure me? ſhall I have the money?'—'Would it were in your belly, with a barrel of gun-powder!' exclaimed the enraged cynick; 'ſince I muſt be excruciated, read that palguy paper!—'Sblood! why didn't

nature

nature clap a pair of long ears and a tail upon me, that I might be a real aſs, and champ thiſtles on ſome common independent of my fellow-creatures? Would I were a worm, that I might creep into the earth, and thatch my habitation with a ſingle ſtraw; or rather a waſp or a viper, that I might make the raſcally world feel my reſentment. But why do I talk of raſcality? folly, folly, is the ſcourge of life! Give me a ſcoundrel, (ſo he be a ſenſible one) and I will put him in my heart of hearts! but a fool is more miſchievous than famine, peſtilence, and war. The idiotical hag that writes, or cauſes to be writ, this ſame letter, has ruined her family, and broke her huſband's heart, by ignorance and miſmanagement; and ſhe imputes her calamity to Providence with a vengeance; and ſo I am defrauded of three hundred pounds, the greateſt part of which I owe to tradeſmen whom I have promiſed to pay this very quarter. Pox upon her! I would ſhe were an horned beaſt, that the diſtemper might lay hold on her. The beldame has the impudence, too, (after ſhe has brought me into this dilemma) to ſolicit my aſſiſtance to ſtock the farm anew! Before God, I have a good mind to ſend her an halter; and perhaps I might purchaſe another for myſelf, but that I would not furniſh food for laughter to knaves and coxcombs!'

Peregrine having peruſed the billet, and liſtened to this ejaculation, replied with great compoſure, that he was aſhamed to ſee a man of his years and pretenſions to philoſophy ſo ruffled by a trifle. 'What ſignify all the boaſted hardſhips you have overcome,' ſaid he, 'and the ſhrewd obſervations you pretend to have made on human nature? Where is that ſtoical indifference you affirm you have attained, when ſuch a paltry diſappointment can diſturb you in this manner? What is the loſs of three hundred pounds, compared with the misfortunes which I myſelf have undergone within theſe two years? Yet you will take upon you to act the cenſor, and inveigh againſt the impatience and impetuoſity of youth, as if you yourſelf had gained an abſolute con-

queſt

quest over all the passions of the heart. You was so kind as to insult me t'other day in my affliction, by reproaching me with indiscretion and misconduct; suppose I were now to retort the imputation, and ask how a man of your profound sagacity could leave your fortune at the discretion of ignorant peasants? How could you be so blind as not to foresee the necessity of repairs, together with the danger of bankruptcy, murrain, or thin crop? Why did not you convert your land into ready-money, and (as you have no connections in life) purchase an annuity, on which you might have lived at your ease, without any fear of the consequence? Can't you, from the whole budget of your philosophy, call one apophthegm to console you for this trivial mischance?'

'Rot your rapidity!' said the cynick, half choaked with gall; 'if the cancer or the pox were in your throat, I should not be thus tormented with your tongue: and yet a magpye shall speak infinitely more to the purpose! Don't you know, Mr. Wiseacre, that my case does not fall within the province of philosophy? Had I been curtailed of all members, racked by the gout and gravel, deprived of liberty, robbed of an only child, or visited with the death of a dear friend like you, philosophy might have contributed to my consolation; but will philosophy pay my debts, or free me from the burden of obligation to a set of fellows whom I despise? Speak!—pronounce—demonstrate—or may Heaven close your mouth for ever!'

'These are the comfortable fruits of your misanthropy,' answered the youth; 'your laudable scheme of detaching yourself from the bonds of society, and of moving in a superior sphere of your own. Had not you been so peculiarly sage, and intent upon laughing at mankind, you could never have been disconcerted by such a pitiful inconvenience: any friend would have accommodated you with the sum in question. But now the world may retort the laugh; for you stand upon such an agreeable footing with your acquaintance, that

nothing

nothing could pleaſe them better than an account of your having given diſappointment the ſlip, by the help of a nooſe properly applied. This I mention by way of hint, upon which I would have you chew the cud of reflection; and ſhould it come to that iſſue, I will uſe my whole intereſt with the coroner to bring in his verdict *Lunacy*, that your carcaſe may have Chriſtian burial.'

So ſaying, he withdrew, very well ſatisfied with the revenge he had taken; which operated ſo violently upon Crabtree, that if it had not been for the ſole conſideration mentioned above, he would, in all probability, have had recourſe to the remedy propoſed. But his unwillingneſs to oblige and entertain his fellow-creatures, hindered him from practiſing that expedient, till, by courſe of poſt, he was happily undeceived with regard to the ſituation of his affairs; and that information had ſuch an effect upon him, that he not only forgave our hero for the ſtratagem, which he immediately aſcribed to the right author, but alſo made him a tender of his purſe; ſo that matters, for the preſent, were brought to an amicable accommodation.

Meanwhile, Peregrine never ſlacked in his attendance upon the great; he never omitted to appear upon every levee day, employed his induſtry and penetration in getting intelligence of poſts that were unfilled, and every day recommended himſelf to the good offices of his patron, who ſeemed to eſpouſe his intereſt with great cordiality: nevertheleſs, he was always too late in his application, or the place he demanded chanced to be out of the miniſter's gift.

Theſe intimations, though communicated in the moſt warm profeſſions of friendſhip and regard, gave great umbrage to the young gentleman, who conſidered them as the evaſions of an inſincere courtier, and loudly complained of them as ſuch to his lordſhip, ſignifying, at the ſame time, an intention to ſell his mortgage for ready-money, which he would expend to the laſt farthing in thwarting his honour in the very firſt election

he ſhould patronize. His lordſhip never wanted a proper exhortation upon theſe occaſions: he did not now endeavour to pacify him with aſſurances of the miniſter's favour, becauſe he perceived that theſe medicines had, by repeated uſe, loſt their effect upon our adventurer, whoſe menaces he now combated, by repreſenting that the miniſter's purſe was heavier than that of Mr. Pickle: that therefore, ſhould he make a point of oppoſing his intereſt, the youth muſt infallibly fail in the conteſt; in which caſe he would find himſelf utterly deſtitute of the means of ſubſiſtence, and conſequently precluded from all hope of proviſion.

This was an obſervation, the truth of which our young gentleman could not pretend to doubt, though it did not at all tend to the vindication of his honour's conduct. Indeed, Pickle began to ſuſpect the ſincerity of his own patron, who, in his opinion, had trifled with his impatience, and even eluded, by ſorry excuſes, his deſire of having another private audience of the firſt mover. His lordſhip alſo began to be leſs acceſſible than uſual; and Peregrine had been obliged to dun the ſteward with repeated demands, before he could finger the laſt quarter of his intereſt.

Alarmed by theſe conſiderations, he went and conſulted the nobleman whom he had obliged in the affair of his ſon; and had the mortification to hear but a very indifferent character of the perſon in whom he had ſo long confided. This new adviſer, who (though a courtier) was a rival of the other, gave our adventurer to underſtand, that he had been leaning upon a broken reed, that his profeſſed patron was a man of a ſhattered fortune and decayed intereſt, which extended no farther than a ſmile and a whiſper; that, for his own part, he ſhould have been proud of an opportunity to uſe his influence with the miniſter in behalf of Mr. Pickle: "But, ſince you have put yourſelf under the protection of another peer," ſaid he, "whoſe connections interfere with mine, I cannot now eſpouſe your cauſe, without incurring the imputation of ſeducing that no-

bleman's adherents; a charge which, of all others I would most carefully avoid. However, I shall always be ready to assist you with my private advice; as a specimen of which, I now counsel you to insist upon having another interview with Sir Steady Steerwell himself, that you may in person explain your pretensions, without any risk of being misrepresented; and endeavour, if possible, to draw him into some particular promise, from which he cannot retract with any regard to his reputation: for general profession is a necessary armour worn by all ministers in their own defence, against the importunity of those whom they will not befriend, and would not disoblige."

This advice was so conformable to his own sentiments, that our adventurer seized the first opportunity to demand an hearing; and plainly told his patron, that if he could not be indulged with that favour, he should look upon his lordship's influence to be very small, and his own hopes to be altogether desperate; in which case, he was resolved to dispose of the mortgage, purchase an annuity, and live independent.

CHAP. VII.

He is indulged with a second Audience by the Minister, of whose Sincerity he is convinced. His pride and Ambition revive, and again are mortified.

IF the young gentleman's money had been in other hands, perhaps the peer would have been at very little pains, either in gratifying his demand, or opposing his revenge; but he knew that the sale of the mortgage could not be effected without an enquiry, to which he did not wish to be exposed. He therefore employed all his interest in procuring the solicited audience. This being granted, Peregrine with great warmth and elocution, expatiated upon the injury his fortune had suffered in the affair of the borough for which he had stood candidate; he took notice of the disappointment he had sustained in the other election, reminded him of the promises with which he had been amused, and

in conclusion, desired to know what he had to expect from his favour.

The minister having patiently heard him to an end, replied with a most gracious aspect, that he was very well informed of his merit and attachment, and very much deference he paid to both; that, till of late, he did not know the nature of his expectations, neither had he the power of creating posts for those whom he was inclined to serve; but if Mr. Pickle would chalk out any feasible method, by which he could manifest his sentiments of friendship, he should not be backward in executing the plan.

Peregrine laying hold on this declaration, mentioned several places which he knew to be vacant: but the old evasion was still used; one of them was not in his department of business; another had been promised to the third son of a certain earl, before the death of the last possessor; and a third was incumbered with a pension which ate up a good half of the appointments. In short such obstructions were started to all his proposals, as he could not possibly surmount; though he plainly perceived, they were no other than specious pretexts to cover the mortifying side of a refusal. Exasperated, therefore, at this lack of sincerity and gratitude, "I can easily foresee," said he, "that such difficulties will never be wanting, when I have any thing to ask; and for that reason will save myself the trouble of any farther application." So saying, he withdrew in a very abrupt manner, breathing defiance and revenge. But his patron, who did not think proper to drive him to extremities, found means to persuade his honour to do something for the pacification of the young man's choler: and that same evening our adventurer received a message from his lordship, desiring to see him immediately.

In consequence of this intimation, Pickle went to his house, and appeared before him with a very cloudy aspect, which signified to whom it might concern, that his temper was at present too much galled to endure

reproof: and therefore the ſagacious peer forebore taking him to taſk for his behaviour during the audience he had obtained; but gave him to underſtand, that the miniſter, in conſideration of his ſervices, had ſent him a bank-note of three hundred pounds, with a promiſe of the like ſum yearly, until he could be otherwiſe provided for. This declaration in ſome meaſure appeaſed the youth, who condeſcended to accept the preſent; and next levee-day made his acknowledgment to the donor, who favoured him with a ſmile of infinite complacency, which entirely diſſipated all the remains of his reſentment; for, as he could not poſſibly divine the true cauſe of his being temporized with, he looked upon this condeſcenſion as an undoubted proof of Sir Steady's ſincerity, and firmly believed that he would ſettle him in ſome place with the firſt opportunity, rather than continue to pay his penſion out of his own pocket. In all probability, his prediction would have been verified, had not an unforeſeen accident in a moment overwhelmed the bark of his intereſt at court.

Meanwhile, this ſhort gleam of good fortune recalled the ideas of pride and ambition, which he had formerly cheriſhed. His countenance was again lifted up, his good humour retrieved, and his mien re-exalted. Indeed, he began to be conſidered as a riſing man by his fellow-dependents, who ſaw the particular notice with which he was favoured at the publick levee and ſome of them, for that reaſon, were at pains to court his good graces. He no longer ſhunned his former intimates, with whom a good part of his fortune had been ſpent, but made up to them in all places of publick reſort, with the ſame eaſe and familiarity he had been uſed to expreſs, and even re-embarked in ſome of their exceſſes, upon the ſtrength of his ſanguine expectation. Cadwallader and he renewed their conſultations in the court of ridicule; and divers exploits were atchieved, to the confuſion of thoſe who had *failed into the North of their diſpleaſure.*

But theſe enjoyments were ſoon interrupted by a misfortune

fortune equally fatal and unexpected: his noble patron was seized with an apoplectick fit, from which he was recovered by the physicians, that they might dispatch him according to rule; and, in two months after they were called, he went the way of all flesh. Peregrine was very much afflicted at this event, not only on account of his friendship for the deceased, to whom he thought himself under many and great obligations, but also, because he feared that his own interest would suffer a severe shock, by the removal of this nobleman, whom he considered as it's chief support. He put himself therefore in mourning, out of regard to the memory of his departed friend, and exhibited genuine marks of sorrow and concern; though he had, in reality, more cause to grieve than he as yet imagined.

When quarter day came about, he applied to the steward of his lordship's heir for the interest of his money as usual; and the reader will readily own had some reason to be surprized, when he was told he had no claim either to principal or interest. True it is, the manager talked very civilly as well as sensibly upon the subject. "Your appearance, Sir," said he to Pickle, "screens you from all suspicion of an intended fraud; but the mortgage upon those lands you mention, was granted to another person many years before you pretend to have lent that sum; and I have this very morning paid one quarter's interest, as appears from this receipt, which you may peruse for your satisfaction."

Peregrine was so thunder struck at this information, which stripped him of his all, that he could not utter one word; a circumstance that did no great honour to his character, in the opinion of the steward; who, in good earnest, began to entertain some doubts of his integrity: for, among the papers of the deceased, which he had examined, there was no writing, memorandum, or receipt, relating to this incumbrance. After a long pause of stupefaction, Peregrine recollected himself so far as to observe, that either he was egregiously mistaken, or the predecessor of his lord the

villain upon earth. "But, Mr. What-d'ye-call-um," ſaid he, "you muſt give me leave to tell you, that your bare aſſertion, in this affair, will by no means induce me to put up quietly with the loſs of ten thouſand pounds."

Having thus expreſſed himſelf, he retired from the houſe ſo diſcontented at this demur, that he ſcarce knew whether he moved upon his head or heels; and the Park chancing to lie in his way, he ſauntered about, giving vent to a ſoliloquy in praiſe of his departed friend, the burden of which was a ſtring of incoherent curſes imprecated upon himſelf; till his tranſports, by degrees giving way to his reflection, he deliberated ſeriouſly and ſorrowfully upon his misfortune, and reſolved to conſult lawyers without loſs of time. But, firſt of all, he propoſed to make perſonal application to the heir; who, by a candid repreſentation of the caſe, might be inclined to do him juſtice.

In conſequence of this determination, he next morning put his writings in his pocket, and went in a chair to the houſe of the young nobleman, to whom being admitted by virtue of his appearance, and a ſmall gratification to the porter, he explained the whole affair, corroborating his aſſertions with the papers which he produced, and deſcribing the diſgrace that would be entailed upon the memory of the deceaſed, ſhould he be obliged to ſeek redreſs in a public court of juſtice.

The executor, who was a perſon of good-breeding, condoled him upon his loſs with great good-nature, though he did not ſeem much ſurprized at his account of the matter; but wiſhed that, ſince the fraud muſt have been commited, the damage had fallen upon the firſt mortgager, who (he ſaid) was a thieviſh uſurer, grown rich by the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures. In anſwer to our hero's remonſtrances, he obſerved, that he did not look upon himſelf as obliged to pay the leaſt regard to the character of his predeceſſor, who had uſed him with great barbarity and injuſtice, not only in excluding him from his countenance and aſſiſtance, but alſo in prejudicing his inheritance as much as lay in his

power; ſo that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would pay ten thouſand pounds of his debt, for which he had received no value. Peregrine, in ſpite of his chagrin, could not help owning within himſelf, that there was a good deal of reaſon in this refuſal. After having given looſe to his indignation, in the moſt violent invectives againſt the defunct, he took his leave of the complaiſant heir, and had immediate recourſe to the advice of counſel, who aſſured him, that he had an excellent plea, and was accordingly retained in the cauſe.

All theſe meaſures were taken in the firſt vigour of his exertion, during which his ſpirits were ſo fluſtered with the diverſity of paſſions produced by his miſchance, that he miſtook for equanimity that which was no other than intoxication; and two whole days elapſed before he attained a due ſenſe of his misfortune. Then, indeed, he underwent a woeful ſelf-examination; every circumſtance of the enquiry added freſh pangs to his reflection; and the reſult of the whole was a diſcovery, that his fortune was totally conſumed, and himſelf reduced to a ſtate of the moſt deplorable dependence. This ſuggeſtion alone might (in the anguiſh of his deſpondency) have driven him to ſome deſperate courſe, had not it been in ſome meaſure qualified by the confidence of his lawyers, and the aſſurance of the miniſter, which (ſlender as the world hath generally found them) were the only bulwarks between miſery and him.

The mind is naturally pliable, and, provided it has the leaſt hope to lean upon, adapts itſelf wonderfully to the emergencies of fortune, eſpecially when the imagination is gay and luxuriant. This was the caſe with our adventurer; inſtead of indulging the melancholy ideas which his loſs inſpired, he had recourſe to the flattering deluſions of hope, ſoothing himſelf with unſubſtantial plans of future greatneſs, and endeavouring to cover what was paſſed with the veil of oblivion.

After ſome heſitation, he reſolved to make Crabtree acquainted

acquainted with his misfortune, that once for all he might pass the ordeal of his satire, without subjecting himself to a long series of sarcastick hints and doubtful allusions, which he could not endure. He accordingly took the first opportunity of telling him, that he was absolutely ruined by the perfidy of his patron, and desired that he would not aggravate his affliction, by those cynical remarks which were peculiar to men of his misanthropical disposition. Cadwallader listened to this declaration with internal surprize; which, however, produced no alteration in his countenance; and after some pause, observed, that our hero had no reason to look for any new observation from him upon this event, which he had long foreseen, and daily expected; and exhorted him, with an ironical sneer, to console himself with the promise of the minister, who would doubtless discharge the debts of his deceased bosom friend.

CHAP. VIII.

Peregrine commits himself to the Publick, and is admitted Member of a College of Authors.

THE bitterness of this explanation being passed, our young gentleman began to revolve within himself schemes for making up the deficiencies of his yearly income, which was now so grievously reduced; and determined to profit, in some shape or other, by those talents which he owed to nature and education. He had, in his affluence, heard of several authors who, without any pretensions to genius, or human literature, earned a very genteel subsistence, by undertaking work for booksellers, in which reputation was not all concerned. One (for example) professed all manner of translation, at so much per sheet, and actually kept five or six amanuenses continually employed, like so many clerks in a compting-house; by which means he was enabled to live at his ease, and enjoy his friend and his bottle, ambitious of no other character than that of an honest man and a good neighbour. Another projected a variety of plans for new dictionaries, which were executed under his eye by day-labourers; and the province of a third

a third was hiſtory and voyages, collected or abriged by underſtrappers of the ſame claſs.

Mr. Pickle, in his compariſons, paid ſuch deference to his own capacity, as baniſhed all doubts of his being able to excel any of thoſe undertakers in their different branches of profeſſion, if ever he ſhould be driven to that experiment: but his ambition prompted him to make his intereſt and glory coincide, by attempting ſome performance which ſhould do him honour with the publick, and at the ſame time eſtabliſh his importance among the copy-purchaſers in town. With this view he worſhipped the muſe; and, conſcious of the little regard which is, in this age, paid to every ſpecies of poetick compoſition, in which neither ſatire nor obſcenity occurs, he produced an imitation of Juvenal, and laſhed ſome conſpicuous characters, with equal truth, ſpirit, and ſeverity. Though his name did not appear in the title-page of this production, he managed matters ſo, as that the work was univerſally imputed to the true author, who was not altogether diſappointed in his expectations of ſucceſs; for the impreſſion was immediately ſold off, and the piece became the ſubject of converſation in all aſſemblies of taſte.

This happy exordium not only attracted the addreſſes of the bookſellers, who made intereſt for his acquaintance, but alſo rouzed the notice of a ſociety of authors, who ſtyled themſelves *the college*, from which he was honoured with a deputation, offering to enrol him a member, by unanimous conſent. The perſon employed for this purpoſe being a bard who had formerly taſted of our hero's bounty, uſed all his eloquence to perſuade him to comply with the advances of their fraternity, which he deſcribed in ſuch a manner, as inflamed the curioſity of Pickle, who diſmiſſed the ambaſſador with an acknowledgment of the great honour they had conferred upon him, and a faithful promiſe of endeavouring to merit the countenance of their approbation.

He was afterwards, by the ſame miniſter inſtructed

in the ceremonies of the college; and, in consequence of his information, composed an Ode, to be publickly recited on the evening of his introduction. He understood that this constitution was no other than a body of authors, incorporated by mutual consent, for their joint advantage and satisfaction, opposed to another assembly of the same kind, their avowed enemies and detractors. No wonder, then, that they sought to strengthen themselves, with such a valuable acquisition as our hero was like to prove. The college consisted of authors only, and these of all degrees in point of reputation, from the fabricator of a song set to musick and sung at Marybone, to the dramatick bard who had appeared in buskins upon the stage: nay, one of the members had actually finished eight books of an epick poem, for the publication of which he was at that time soliciting subscriptions.

It cannot be supposed that such a congregation of the sons of Apollo would sit a whole evening with order and decorum, unless they were under the check of some established authority: and this inconvenience having been foreseen, they had elected a president, vested with full powers to silence any member or members, that should attempt to disturb the harmony and subordination of the whole. The sage who at this time possessed the chair, was a person in years, whose countenance was a lively portrait of that rancorous discontent which follows repeated damnation. He had been extremely unfortunate in his theatrical productions, and was (to use the words of a profane wag, who assisted at the condemnation of his last play) by this time *damned beyond redemption*. Nevertheless, he still tarried about the skirts of Parnassus, translating some of the classicks, and writing miscellanies; and, by dint of an invincible assurance, supercilious insolence, the most undaunted virulence of tongue, and some knowledge of life, he made shift to acquire and maintain the character of a man of learning and wit, in the opinion of people who had neither; that is, thirty-nine in forty

of

of thoſe with whom he aſſociated himſelf. He was even looked upon in this light by ſome few of the college; though the major part of thoſe who favoured his election were ſuch as dreaded his malice, reſpected his experience and ſeniority, or hated his competitor, who was the epick poet.

The chief end of this ſociety (as I have already hinted) was to aſſiſt and ſupport each other in their productions, which they mutually recommended to ſale, with all their art and influence, not only in private converſation, but alſo in occaſional epigrams, criticiſms, and advertiſements, inſerted in the publick papers. This ſcience, which is known by the vulgar appellation of *puffing*, they carried to ſuch a pitch of fineſſe, that an author very often wrote an abuſive anſwer to his own performance, in order to inflame the curioſity of the town, by which it had been overlooked. Notwithſtanding this general unanimity in the college, a private animoſity had long ſubſiſted between the two rivals I have mentioned, on account of precedence, to which both laid claim, though by a majority of voices it had been decided in favour of the preſent chairman. The grudge, indeed, never proceeded to any degree of outrage or defiance, but manifeſted itſelf at every meeting, in attempts to eclipſe each other in ſmart ſayings and pregnant repartee: ſo that there was always a delicate meſs of this kind of wit ſerved up in the front of the evening, for the entertainment and example of the junior members, who never failed to divide upon this occaſion, declaring themſelves for one or other of the combatants, whom they encouraged by their looks, geſtures, and applauſe, according to the circumſtances of the diſpute.

This honourable conſiſtory was held in the beſt room of an ale-houſe, which afforded wine, punch, or beer, ſuitable to the purſe or inclination of every individual, who ſeparately paid for his own choice: and here was our hero introduced, in the midſt of twenty ſtrangers, who, by their looks and equipage, formed a very picturesque

tureſque variety. He was received with a moſt gracious ſolemnity, and placed upon the right-hand of the preſident, who having commanded ſilence, recited aloud his introductory Ode, which met with univerſal approbation. Then was tendered to him the cuſtomary oath, obliging him to conſult the honour and advantage of the ſociety as far as it ſhould lie in his power, in every ſtation of life; and this being taken, his temples were bound with a wreath of laurel, which was kept ſacred for ſuch inauguration.

When theſe rites were performed with all due ceremony, the new member caſt his eyes around the place, and took a more accurate ſurvey of his brethren; among whom he obſerved a ſtrange collection of perwigs, with regard to the colour, faſhions, and dimenſions, which were ſuch as he had never ſeen before. Thoſe who ſat on each ſide, neareſt the preſident, were generally diſtinguiſhed by venerable tyes, the fore-tops of which exhibited a ſurprizing diverſity; ſome of them roſe ſlanting backwards, like the glacis of a fortification; ſome were elevated on two diſtinct eminences, like the hills of Helicon and Parnaſſus; and others were curled and reflected, as the horns of Jupiter Ammon. Next to theſe, the majors took place, many of which were mere *ſuccedanea*, made by the application of an occaſional roſe to the tail of a lank bob; and in the lower form appeared maſſes of hair which would admit of no deſcription.

Their cloaths were tolerably well ſuited to the furniture of their heads, the apparel of the upper-bench being decent and clean, while that of the ſecond claſs was threadbare and ſoiled; and at the lower end of the room, he perceived divers efforts made to conceal their rent breeches and dirty linen: nay, he could diſtinguiſh by their countenances, the different kinds of poetry in which they exerciſed the muſe; he ſaw Tragedy conſpicuous in a grave ſolemnity of regard; Satire louring in a frown of envy and diſcontent; Elegy whining in a funeral aſpect; Paſtoral dozing in a moſt inſipid

langour

languor of face; Ode-writing delineated in a distracted stare; and Epigram squinting with a pert sneer. Perhaps our hero refined too much in his penetration, when he affirmed, that over and above these discoveries, he could plainly perceive the state of every one's finances, and would have undertaken to have guessed each particular sum, without varying three farthings from the truth.

The conversation, instead of becoming general, began to fall into parties: and the epick poet had actually attracted the attention of a private committee, when the chairman interposed, calling aloud, "No cabal! no conspiracies, gentlemen!" His rival thinking it incumbent upon him to make some reply to this rebuke, answered, "We have no secrets; he that hath ears, let him hear." This was spoken as an intimation to the company, whose looks were instantly whetted with the expectation of their ordinary meal; but the president seemed to decline the contest; for, without putting on his fighting face, he calmly replied, that he had seen Mr. Metaphor tip the wink, and whisper to one of his confederates, and thence judged that there was something mysterious on the carpet.

The epick poet, believing his antagonist crest-fallen, resolved to take the advantage of his dejection, that he might enhance his own character in the opinion of the stranger; and with that view asked, with an air of exultation, if a man might not be allowed to have a convulsion in his eye, without being suspected of a conspiracy. The president perceiving his drift, and piqued at his presumption, "To be sure," said he, "a man of a weak head may be very well supposed to have convulsions in his eyes." This repartee produced a laugh of triumph among the chairman's adherents; one of whom observed, that his rival had got a smart rap on the pate. "Yes," replied the bard, "in that respect Mr. Chairman has the advantage of me. Had my head been fortified with a horn work, I should not have been so sensible of the stroke." This retort, which

carried a ſevere allusion to the preſident's wife, lighted up the countenances of the aggreſſor's friends, which had begun to be a little obumbrated; and had a contrary effect upon the other faction, till their chief, collecting all his capacity, returned the ſalute, by obſerving, that there was no occaſion for an horn-work, when the covered-way was not worth defending.

Such a repriſal upon Mr. Metaphor's yoke-fellow, who was by no means remarkable for her beauty, could not fail to operate upon the hearers; and as for the bard himſelf, he was evidently ruffled by the reflection; to which however he, without heſitation, replied, "Egad! 'tis my opinion, that if your covered-way was laid open, few people would venture to give the aſſault."—"Not unleſs their batteries were more effectual than the fire of your wit," ſaid the preſident. "As for that matter," cried the other with precipitation, "they would have no occaſion to batter in breach; they would find the angle of the *lapucelle* baſtion demoliſhed to their hands: He! he!"—"But I believe it would ſurpaſs your underſtanding," reſumed the chairman, "to fill up the *foſſe*."—"That, I own, is impracticable," replied the bard, "there I ſhould meet with an *hiatus maxime deflendus!*"

The preſident, exaſperated at this inſinuation, in preſence of the new member, exclaimed with indignation in his looks, "And yet, if a body of pioneers were ſet at work upon your ſkull, they would find rubbiſh enough to choak up all the common-ſewers in town." Here a groan was uttered by the admirers of the epick poet; who, taking a pinch of ſnuff with great composure, "When a man grows ſcurrilous," ſaid he, "I take it for an undoubted proof of his overthrow."—"If that be the caſe," cried the other, "you yourſelf muſt be the vanquiſhed party; for you was the firſt that was driven to perſonal abuſe."—"I appeal," anſwered the bard, "to thoſe who can diſtinguiſh. Gentlemen, your judgment?"

This reference produced an univerſal clamour, and

the whole college was involved in confuſion. Every man entered into diſpute with his neighbour on the merits of this cauſe. The chairman interpoſed authority in vain; the noiſe grew louder and louder; the diſputants waxed warm; the epithets of *blockhead*, *fool*, and *ſcoundrel*, were bandied about. Peregrine enjoyed the uproar, and leaping upon the table, ſounded the charge to battle, which was immediately commenced in ten different duels. The lights were extinguiſhed; the combatants threſhed one another without diſtinction; the miſchievous Pickle diſtributed ſundry random blows in the dark; and the people below, being alarmed with the ſound of application, the overturning of chairs, and the outcries of thoſe who were engaged, came up ſtairs in a body with lights, to reconnoitre, and, if poſſible, quell this hideous tumult.

Objects were no ſooner rendered viſible, than the field of battle exhibited ſtrange groupes of the ſtanding and the fallen. Each of Mr. Metaphor's eyes was ſurrounded with a circle of a livid hue; and the preſident's noſe diſtilled a quantity of clotted blood. One of the tragick authors, finding himſelf aſſaulted in the dark, had, by way of a poniard, employed upon his adverſary's throat a knife which lay upon the table, for the convenience of cutting cheeſe; but, by the bleſſing of God, the edge of it was not keen enough to enter the ſkin, which it had only ſcratched in divers places. A ſatyriſt had almoſt bit off the ear of a lyrick bard. Shirts and neckloths were torn to rags; and there was ſuch a woeful wreck of periwigs on the floor, that no examination could adjuſt the property of the owners, the greateſt part of whom were obliged to uſe handkerchiefs by way of night-cap.

The fray, however, ceaſed at the approach of thoſe who interpoſed; part of the combatants being tired of an exerciſe in which they had received nothing but hard blows; part of them being intimidated by the remonſtrances of the landlord and his company, who

threatened to call the watch; and a very few being ashamed of the scandalous dispute in which they were detected. But though the battle was ended, it was impossible, for that evening, to restore harmony and good order to the society, which broke up, after the president had pronounced a short and confused apology to our adventurer, for the indecent uproar which had unfortunately happened on the first night of his admission.

Indeed, Peregrine deliberated with himself, whether or not his reputation would allow him to appear again among this venerable fraternity: but, as he knew some of them to be men of real genius, how ridiculous soever their carriage might be modified, and was of that laughing disposition, which is always seeking food for mirth, as Horace observes of Philippus,

Risus undique quærit;

he resolved to frequent the college, notwithstanding this accident which happened at his inauguration; being thereto, moreover, induced by his desire of knowing the private history of the stage, with which he supposed some of the members perfectly well acquainted. He was also visited before the next meeting, by his introductor, who assured him, that such a tumult had never happened since the first institution of the assembly till that very night; and promised, that for the future he should have no cause to be scandalized at their behaviour.

Persuaded by these motives and assurances, he trusted himself once more in the midst of their community, and every thing proceeded with great decorum; all disputes and altercation was avoided; and the college applied itself seriously to the purposes of it's meeting, namely, to hear the grievances of individuals, and assist them with salutary advice. The first person that craved redress, was a noisy North Briton, who complained (in a strange dialect) that he had, in the beginning of the season, presented a comedy to the manager of a certain theatre;

theatre; who, after it had lain ſix weeks in his hands, returned it to the author, affirming there was neither ſenſe nor Engliſh in the performance.

The preſident (who, by the bye, had reviſed the piece) thinking his own reputation concerned, declared, in preſence of the whole ſociety, that with regard to ſenſe, he would not undertake to vindicate the production; but, in point of language, no fault could be juſtly laid to it's charge: "The caſe, however, is very plain," ſaid he; "the manager never gave himſelf the trouble to peruſe the play, but formed a judgment of it from the converſation of the author, never dreaming that it had undergone the reviſal of an Engliſh writer; be that as it will, you are infinitely obliged to him for having diſpatched you ſo ſoon, and I ſhall have the better opinion of him for it as long as I live; for I have known otherguiſe authors than you (that is, in point of intereſt and fame) kept in continual attendance and dependence the beſt part of their lives, and after all, diſappointed in the expectation of ſeeing their performances exhibited on the ſtage."

CHAP. IX.

Farther Proceedings of the College.

THIS affair was no ſooner diſcuſſed, than another gentleman exhibited a complaint, ſignifying, that he had undertaken to tranſlate into Engliſh a certain celebrated author, who had been cruelly mangled by former attempts; and that as ſoon as his deſign took air, the proprietors of the miſerable tranſlations had endeavoured to prejudice his work, by induſtrious inſinuations, contrary to truth and fair-dealing, importing, that he did not underſtand one word of the language which he pretended to tranſlate. This being a caſe that nearly concerned the greateſt part of the audience, it was taken into ſerious deliberation: ſome obſerved, that it was not only a malicious effort againſt the plaintiff, but alſo a ſpiteful advertiſement to the publick, tending to promote an enquiry into the abilities of all other tranſlators, few of whom (it was well known) were

were ſo qualified as to ſtand the teſt of this examination. Others ſaid, over and above this conſideration, which ought to have it's due weight with the college, there was a neceſſity for concerting meaſures to humble the preſumption of bookſellers; who had from time immemorial, taken all opportunities to oppreſs and enſlave their authors; not only by limiting men of genius to the wages of journeymen taylors, without even allowing them one ſabbath in the week, but alſo in taking ſuch advantages of their neceſſities, as were inconſiſtent with juſtice and humanity. "For example," ſaid one of the members, "after I myſelf had acquired a little reputation with the town, I was careſſed by one of thoſe tyrants, who profeſſed a friendſhip for me, and even ſupplied me with money, according to the exigencies of my ſituation; ſo that I looked upon him as the mirrour of diſintereſted benevolence; and had he known my diſpoſition, and treated me accordingly, I ſhould have writ for him upon his own terms. After I had uſed his friendſhip in this manner for ſome time, I happened to have occaſion for a ſmall ſum of money, and with great confidence made another application to my good friend; when all of a ſudden he put a ſtop to his generoſity, refuſed to accommodate me in the moſt abrupt and mortifying ſtyle, and though I was at that time pretty far advanced in a work for his benefit, which was a ſufficient ſecurity for what I owed him, he roundly aſked, how I propoſed to pay the money which I had already borrowed. Thus was I uſed like a young whore juſt come upon the town, whom the bawd allows to run into her debt, that ſhe may have it in her power to oppreſs her at pleaſure; and if the ſufferer complains, ſhe is treated like the moſt ungrateful wretch upon earth; and that too with ſuch appearance of reaſon, as may eaſily miſlead an unconcerned ſpectator. "You unthankful drab!" ſhe will ſay, "did'n't I take you into my houſe when you had'n't a ſhift to your back, a petticoat to your tail, nor a morſel of bread to put

into your belly? Ha'n't I cloathed you from head to foot like a gentlewoman; supported you with board, lodging, and all necessaries, till your own extravagance hath brought you into distress; and now you have the impudence, you nasty, stinking, brimstone bung-away! to say you are hardly dealt with, when I demand no more than my own." Thus the whore and the author are equally oppressed, and even left without the melancholy privilege of complaining; so that they are fain to subscribe to such terms as their creditors shall please to impose."

This illustration operated so powerfully upon the conviction and resentment of the whole college, that revenge was universally denounced against those who had aggrieved the plaintiff; and after some debate it was agreed he should make a new translation of some other saleable book, in opposition to a former version belonging to the delinquents, and print it in such a small size, as would enable him to undersell their property; and that this new translation should be recommended and introduced into the world with the whole art and influence of the society.

This affair being settled to the satisfaction of all present, an author of some character stood up, and craved the advice and assistance of his fellows, in punishing a certain nobleman of great pretensions to taste, who, in consequence of a production which this gentleman had ushered into the world with universal applause, not only desired, but even eagerly courted his acquaintance. "He invited me to his house," said he, "where I was overwhelmed with civility and professions of friendship. He insisted upon my treating him as an intimate, and calling upon him at all hours, without ceremony; he made me promise to breakfast with him at least three times a week: in short, I looked upon myself as very fortunate, in meeting with such advances from a man of his interest and reputation, who had it in his power to befriend me so effectually in my passage through life; and, that I might not give him any cause

to

to think I neglected his friendſhip, I went to his houſe in two days, with a view of drinking chocolate, according to appointment; but he had been ſo much fatigued with dancing at an aſſembly over night, that his valet de chambre would not venture to wake him ſo early; and I left my compliments to his lordſhip, with a performance in manuſcript, which he had expreſſed a moſt eager deſire to peruſe. I repeated my viſit next morning, that his impatience to ſee me might not have ſome violent effect upon his conſtitution; and received a meſſage from his miniſter, ſignifying that he had been highly entertained with the manuſcript I had left, a great part of which he had read, but was at preſent ſo buſy in contriving a proper dreſs for a private maſquerade, which would be given that ſame evening, that he could not have the pleaſure of my company at breakfaſt. This was a feaſible excuſe, which I admitted accordingly; and in a day or two appeared again, when his lordſhip was particularly engaged. This might poſſibly be the caſe; and therefore I returned the fourth time, in hopes of finding him more at leiſure; but he had gone out about half an hour before my arrival, and left my performance with his valet de chambre, who aſſured me that his lord had peruſed it with infinite pleaſure. Perhaps I might have retired very well ſatisfied with this declaration, had not I, in my paſſage through the hall, heard one of the footmen, upon the top of the ſtair-caſe, pronounce with an audible voice, "Will your lordſhip pleaſe to be at home when he calls?" It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was pleaſed at this diſcovery; which I no ſooner made, than turning to my conductor, "I find," ſaid I, "his lordſhip is diſpoſed to be abroad to more people than me this morning." The fellow (though a valet de chambre) bluſhed at this obſervation; and I withdrew, not a little irritated at the peer's diſingenuity, and fully reſolved to ſpare him my viſits for the future. It was not long after this occaſion, that I happened to meet him in the Park, and being naturally civil, I could

could not pass him without a salutation of the hat, which he returned in the most distant manner, though we were both solitary, and not a soul within view; and when that very performance, which he had applauded so warmly, was lately published by subscription, he did not bespeak so much as one copy. I have often reflected with wonder upon this inconsistency in his conduct. I never courted his patronage, nor indeed thought of his name, until he made interest for my acquaintance; and if he was disappointed in my conversation, why did he press me so much to farther connection?"

"The case is very clear," cried the chairman, interruping him: "he is one of those connoisseurs who set up for taste, and value themselves upon knowing all men of genius, whom they would be thought to assist in their productions. I will lay an even bet with any man, that his lordship, on the strength of that slender interview, together with the opportunity of having seen your performance in manuscript, has already hinted to every company in which he is conversant, that you solicited his assistance in retouching the piece, which you have offered to the publick, and that he was pleased to favour you with his advice, but found you obstinately bigotted to your own opinion, in some points relating to those very passages which have not met with the approbation of the town. As for his caresses, there was nothing at all extraordinary in his behaviour. By that time you have lived to my age, you will not be surprized to see a courtier's promise and performance of a different complexion; not but that I would willingly act as an auxiliary in your resentment."

The opinion of the president was strengthened by the concurrence of all the members; and all other complaints and memorials being deferred till another sitting, the college proceeded to an exercise of wit, which was generally performed once every fortnight, with a view to promote the expectoration of genius. The subject was occasionally chosen by the chairman, who opened

opened the game with ſome ſhrewd remark naturally ariſing from the converſation; and then the ball was toſſed about from one corner of the room to the other, according to the motions of the ſpirit.

That the reader may have a juſt idea of this ſport, and of the abilities of thoſe who carried it on, I ſhall repeat the ſallies of this evening, according to the order and ſucceſſion in which they eſcaped. One of the members obſerving that Mr. Metaphor was abſent, was told by the perſon who ſat next to him, that the poet had foul weather at home, and could not ſtir abroad. "What!" ſaid the preſident interpoſing, with the ſignal upon his countenance, "is he wind-bound in port?"—"Wine-bound, I ſuppoſe," cried another.—"Hooped with wine! a ſtrange metaphor!" ſaid the third.—"Not if he has got into a hogſhead," anſwered the fourth.—"The hogſhead will ſooner get into him," replied a fifth; "it muſt be a tun or an ocean."—"No wonder, then, if he ſhould be overwhelmed," ſaid a ſixth.—"If he ſhould," cried a ſeventh, "he will caſt up when his gall breaks."—"That muſt be very ſoon," roared an eighth, "for it has been long ready to burſt."—"No, no," obſerved a ninth, "he'll ſtick faſt at the bottom, take my word for it; he has a *natural alacrity in ſinking*."—"And yet," remarked a tenth, "I have ſeen him in the clouds."—"Then was he cloudy, I ſuppoſe," cried the eleventh.—"So dark," replied the other, "that his meaning could not be perceived."—"For all that," ſaid the twelfth, "he is eaſily ſeen through."—"You talk," anſwered the thirteenth, "as if his head was made of glaſs."—"No, no," cried a fourteenth, "his head is made of more durable ſtuff; it will bend before it breaks."—"Yet I have ſeen it broken," reſumed the preſident.—"Did you perceive any wit come out at the hole?" ſaid another.—"His wit," replied the chairman, "is too ſubtle to be perceived."

A third mouth was juſt opened, when the exerciſe was ſuddenly interrupted by the dreadful cry of "Fire!" which iſſued from the kitchen, and involved the whole college

college in confuſion. Every man endeavouring to be the firſt in making his exiſt, the door and paſſage were blocked up: each individual was pummelled by the perſon that happened to be behind him. This communication produced noiſe and exclamation; clouds of ſmoke rolled upwards into the apartment, and terror ſat on every brow; when Peregrine, ſeeing no proſpect of retreating by the door, opened one of the windows, and fairly leaped into the ſtreet, where he found a crowd of people aſſembled to contribute their aſſiſtance in extinguiſhing the flames. Several members of the college followed his example, and happily accompliſhed their eſcape: the chairman himſelf being unwilling to uſe the ſame expedient, ſtood trembling on the brink of deſcent, dubious of his own agility, and dreading the conſequence of ſuch a leap, when a chair happening to paſs, he laid hold on the opportunity, and by an exertion of his muſcles pitched upon the top of the carriage, which was immediately over-turned in the kennel, to the grievous annoyance of the faire, which happened to be a certain effeminate beau, in full dreſs, on his way to a private aſſembly.

This phantom hearing the noiſe over head, and feeling the ſhock of being overthrown at the ſame time, thought that ſome whole tenement had fallen upon the chair, and, in the terror of being cruſhed to pieces, uttered a ſcream which the populace ſuppoſed to proceed from the mouth of a woman, and therefore went to his aſſiſtance; while the chairmen, inſtead of miniſtering to his occaſions, no ſooner recollected themſelves, than they run in purſuit of their overthrower, who being accuſtomed to eſcape from bailiffs, dived into a dark alley, and vaniſhing in a trice, was not viſible to any living ſoul, until he appeared next day on Tower Hill.

The humane part of the mob, who beſtirred themſelves for the relief of the ſuppoſed lady, no ſooner perceived their miſtake in the appearance of the beau, who ſtared around him with horror and affright, than their

their compaſſion was changed into mirth, and they began to paſs a great many unſavoury jokes upon his misfortune, which they now diſcovered no inclination to alleviate; and he found himſelf very uncomfortably beſet, when Pickle, pitying his ſituation, interpoſed in his behalf, and prevailed upon the chairmen to carry him into the houſe of an apothecary in the neighbourhood, to whom his miſchance proved a very advantageous accident; for the fright operated ſo violently upon his nerves, that he was ſeized with a delirium, and lay a whole fortnight deprived of his ſenſes; during which period he was not neglected in point of medicines, food, and attendance, but royally regaled, as appeared by the contents of the landlord's bill.

Our adventurer having ſeen this unfortunate beau ſafely houſed, returned to the ſcene of the other calamity: which, as it was no other than a foul chimney, ſoon yielded to the endeavours of the family, and was happily overcome, without any other bad conſequence than that of alarming the neighbours, diſturbing the college, and diſordering the brain of a beau.

Eager to be acquainted with the particular conſtitutions of a ſociety which ſeemed to open upon him by degrees, Mr. Pickle did not fail to appear at the next meeting, when ſeveral petitions were laid before the board, in behalf of thoſe members who were confined in the priſons of the Fleet, Marſhalſea, and King's Bench. As thoſe unhappy authors expected nothing from their brethren but advice and good offices, which did not concern the purſe, the memorials were conſidered with great care and humanity; and, upon this occaſion, Peregrine had it in his power to manifeſt his importance to the community; for he happened to be acquainted with the creditor of one of the priſoners, and knew that gentleman's ſeverity was owing to his reſentment at the behaviour of the debtor, who had lampooned him in print, becauſe he refuſed to comply with a freſh demand, after he had lent him money to the amount of a conſiderable ſum. Our young gentleman

man therefore underſtanding that the author was penitent, and diſpoſed to make a reaſonable ſubmiſſion, promiſed to employ his influence with the creditor towards an accommodation; and in a few days actually obtained his releaſe.

The ſocial duties being diſcharged, the converſation took a general turn, and ſeveral new productions were freely criticiſed; thoſe eſpecially which belonged to authors who were either unconnected with, or unknown to the college. Nor did the profeſſion of ſtage-playing eſcape the cognizance of the aſſembly: a deputation of the moſt judicious members being ſent weekly to each theatre, with a view of making remarks upon the performance of the actors. The cenſors for the preceding week were accordingly called upon to give in their report; and the play which they had reviewed was the Revenge.

"Mr. Q—," ſaid the ſecond cenſor, "take him all in all, is certainly the moſt compleat and unblemiſhed performer that ever appeared on our ſtage, notwithſtanding the blind adoration which is paid to his rival. I went two nights ago, with an expreſs deſign to criticiſe his action: I could find no room for cenſure, but infinite ſubject for admiration and applauſe. In Pierre he is great, in Othello excellent, but in Zanga beyond all imitation. Over and above the diſtinctneſs of pronunciation, the dignity of attitude, and expreſſion of face, his geſtures are ſo juſt and ſignificant, that a man, though utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing, might, by ſeeing him only, underſtand the meaning of every word he ſpeaks. Sure nothing can be more exquiſite than his manner of telling Iſabella how Alonzo behaved when he found the incendiary letter which ſhe had dropped by the Moor's direction; and when, to crown his vengeance, he diſcovers himſelf to be the contriver of all the miſchief that had happened, he manifeſts a perfect maſter-piece of action, in pronouncing theſe four little monoſyllables, "*Know, then, 'twas——I.*"

Peregrine having eyed the critick ſome minutes—"I

fancy," said he, "your praise must be ironical, because, in the very two situations you mention, I think I have seen that player out-herod Herod; or, in other words, exceed all his other extravagancies. The intention of the author is, that the Moor should communicate to his confidante a piece of information contained in a few lines; which, doubtless, ought to be repeated with an air of eagerness and satisfaction, not with the ridiculous grimace of a monkey, to which, methought, his action bore an intimate resemblance in uttering this plain sentence:

———he took it up;
But scarce was it unfolded to his sight,
When he, as if an arrow pierc'd his eye,
Started, and trembling dropp'd it on the ground.

In pronouncing the first two words, this egregious actor stoops down, and seems to take up something from the stage; then proceeding to repeat what follows, mimicks the manner of unfolding a letter: when he mentions the simile of an arrow piercing the eye, he darts his fore-finger towards that organ, then recoils with great violence when the word *started* is expressed; and when he comes to *trembling dropp'd it on the ground*, he throws all his limbs into a tremulous motion, and shakes the imaginary paper from his hand. The latter part of the description is carried on with the same minute gesticulation while he says—

Pale and aghast awhile my victim stood.
Disguis'd a sigh or two, and puff'd them from him;
Then rubb'd his brow, and took it up again.

The player's countenance assumes a wild stare, he sighs twice most piteously, as if he were on the point of suffocation, scrubs his forehead, and bending his body, apes the action of snatching an object from the floor. Nor is this dexterity of dumb-shew omitted, when he concludes his intimation in these three lines:

At first, he look'd as if he meant to read it;
But, check'd by rising fears, he crush'd it thus,
And thrust it, like an adder, in his bosom.

Here

Here the judicious performer imitates the confusion and concern of Alonzo; seems to cast his eyes upon something, from which they are immediately withdrawn with horror and precipitation; then shutting his fist with a violent squeeze, as if he intended to make immediate application to Isabella's nose, he rams it in his own bosom, with all the horror and agitation of a thief taken in the manner. Were the player debarred the use of speech, and obliged to act to the eyes only of the audience, this mimickry might be a necessary conveyance of his meaning; but when he is at liberty to signify his ideas by language, nothing can be more trivial, forced, unnatural, and antick, than this superfluous mummery. Not that I would exclude from the representation the graces of action, without which the choicest sentiments, cloathed in the most exquisite expression, would appear unanimated and insipid; but these are as different from this ridiculous burlesque, as is the demeanor of a Tully in the rostrum, from the tricks of a Jack-pudding on a mountebank's stage: and for the truth of what I alledge, I appeal to the observation of any person who has considered the elegance of attitude and propriety of gesture, as they are universally acknowledged in the real characters of life. Indeed, I have known a Gascon, whose limbs were as eloquent as his tongue; he never mentioned the word *sleep* without reclining his head upon his hand; when he had occasion to talk of an horse, he always started up and trotted across the room, except when he was so situated that he could not stir without incommoding the company, and in that case he contented himself with neighing aloud: if a dog happened to be the subject of his conversation, he wagged his tail, and grinned in a most significant manner; and one day he expressed his desire of going backwards with such natural imitation of his purpose, that every body in the room firmly believed he had actually overshot himself, and fortified their nostrils accordingly. Yet no man ever looked upon this virtuoso to be the standard of pro-

priety in point of ſpeaking and deportment. For my own part, I confeſs the player in queſtion would, by dint of theſe qualifications, make a very good figure in the character of Pantaloon's lacquey, in the entertainment of Perſeus and Andromeda, and perhaps might acquire ſome reputation, by turning the Revenge into a pantomine; in which caſe, I would adviſe him to come upon the ſtage, provided with an handful of flour, in order to beſm ear his face, when he pronounces *pale and aghaſt*, &c. and methinks he ought to illuſtrate the adder with an hideous hiſs. But let us now come to the other ſituation, in which this modern Æſopus is ſuppoſed to diſtinguiſh himſelf ſo much; I mean that ſame *eclairciſſement* comprehended in, *Know then, 'twas——I.* His manner, I own, may be altered ſince I was preſent at the repreſentation of that performance: but certain I am, when I beheld him in that critical conjuncture, his behaviour appeared to me ſo uncouth, that I really imagined he was viſited by ſome epileptick diſtemper; for he ſtood tottering and gaſping for the ſpace of two minutes, like a man ſuddenly ſtruck with the palſy; and after various diſtortions, and ſide ſhakings, as if he had got fleas in his doublet, heaved up from his lungs the letter *I*, like a huge anchor from foul ground.'

This criticiſm was acceptable to the majority of the college, who had no great veneration for the player in queſtion; and his admirer, without making any reply, aſked in a whiſper, of the gentleman who ſat next to him, if Pickle had not offered ſome production to the ſtage, and met with a repulſe.

CHAP. X.

The Young Gentleman is introduced to a Virtuoſo of the firſt Order, and commences Yelper.

HITHERTO Peregrine had profeſſed himſelf an author, without reaping the fruits of that occupation, except the little fame he had acquired by his late ſatire; but now he thought it high time to weigh *ſolid pudding*

pudding against empty praise; and therefore engaged with some booksellers in a certain translation, which he obliged himself to perform for the consideration of two hundred pounds. The articles of agreement being drawn, he began his task with great eagerness; rose early in the morning to his work, at which he laboured all day long; went abroad with the bats in the evening, and appeared in the coffee-house, where he amused himself with the newspapers and conversation till nine o'clock; then he retired to his own apartment, and after a slight repast, betook himself to rest, that he might be able to unroost with the cock. This sudden change from his former way of life agreed so ill with his disposition, that, for the first time, he was troubled with flatulencies and indigestion, which produced anxiety and dejection of spirits; and the nature of his situation began in some measure to discompose his brain; a discovery which he no sooner made, than he had recourse to the advice of a young physician, who was a member of the college of authors, at this time one of our hero's most intimate acquaintance.

The son of Æsculapius having considered his case, imputed his disorder to the right cause, namely, want of exercise; dissuaded him from such close application to study, until he should be gradually familiarized to a sedentary life; advised him to enjoy his friend and his bottle in moderation, and wean himself from his former customs by degrees, and, above all things, to rise immediately after his first sleep, and exercise himself in a morning's walk. In order to render the last part of the prescription the more palatable, the doctor promised to attend him in these early excursions, and even to introduce him to a certain personage of note, who gave a sort of publick breakfasting to the minor virtuosi of the age, and often employed his interest in behalf of those who properly cultivated his countenance and approbation.

This proposal was extremely acceptable to our young gentleman; who, besides the advantage which might

accrue to him from ſuch a valuable connection, foreſaw much entertainment and ſatisfaction in the diſcourſe of ſo many learned gueſts. The occaſions of his health and intereſt, moreover, coincided in another circumſtance; the miniſter's levee being kept betimes in the morning; ſo that he could perform his walk, yield his attendance, and breakfaſt at this philoſophical board, without encroaching a great deal upon his other avocations.

Meaſures being thus preconcerted, the phyſician conducted our adventurer to the houſe of this celebrated ſage, to whom he recommended him as a gentleman of genius and taſte, who craved the honour of his acquaintance: but he had previouſly ſmoothed the way to his introduction, by repreſenting Peregrine as a young fellow of great ambition, ſpirit, and addreſs, who could not fail to make a figure in the world; that therefore he would be a creditable addition to the ſubordinates of ſuch a patron; and by his qualifications, intrepidity, and warmth of temper, turn out a conſummate herald of his fame.

Upon theſe conſiderations, he met with a moſt engaging reception from the entertainer, who was a well-bred man, of ſome learning, generoſity, and taſte; but his foible was, the deſire of being thought the inimitable pattern of all three.

It was with a view to acquire and ſupport this character, that this houſe was open to all thoſe who had any pretenſions to literature; conſequently he was ſurrounded by a ſtrange variety of pretenders; but none were diſcouraged, becauſe he knew that even the moſt inſignificant might, in ſome ſhape, conduce to the propagation of his praiſe. A babbler, though he cannot run upon the ſcent, may ſpring the game, and by his yelping help to fill up the cry: no wonder, then, that a youth of Pickle's accompliſhments was admitted, and even invited into the pack. After having enjoyed a very ſhort private audience in the cloſet, our young gentleman was ſhewn into another room, where half a

 dozen

dozen of his fellow adherents waited for their Mæcenas; who in a few minutes appeared, with a moſt gracious aſpect received the compliments of the morning, and ſat down to breakfaſt in the midſt of them without any farther ceremony.

The converſation at firſt turned upon the weather, which was inveſtigated in a very philoſophical manner by one of the company, who ſeemed to have conſulted all the barometers and thermometers that ever were invented, before he would venture to affirm that it was a chill morning. This ſubject being accurately diſcuſſed, the chief enquired about the news of the learned world; and his inclination was no ſooner expreſſed, than every gueſt opened his mouth, in order to gratify his curioſity: but he that firſt captivated his attention was a meagre, ſhrivelled antiquary, who looked like an animated mummy, which had been ſcorched among the ſands of the deſart. He told the patron, that he had by accident met with a medal, which, though it was defaced by time, he would venture to pronounce a genuine antique, from the ringing and taſte of the metal, as well as from the colour and compoſition of the ruſt: ſo ſaying, he produced a piece of copper coin, ſo conſumed and diſguiſed by age, that ſcarce a veſtige of the impreſſion was to be perceived. Nevertheleſs, this connoiſſeur pretended to diſtinguiſh a face in profile, from which he concluded that the piece was of the Upper Empire, and on the reverſe he endeavoured to point out the bulb of the ſpear, and part of the parazonium, which were the inſignia of the Roman Virtus, together with the fragment of one fold of the multicium in which ſhe was cloathed. He likewiſe had diſcovered an angle of the letter N: and at ſome diſtance an entire I; from theſe circumſtances conjecturing, and indeed concluding, that the medal was ſtruck by Severus, in honour of the victory he obtained over his rival Niger, after he had forced the paſſes of Mount Taurus. This criticiſm ſeemed very ſatisfactory to the entertainer, who having

ing examined the coin by the help of his spectacles, plainly discerned the particulars which the owner had mentioned, and was pleased to term his account of the matter a very ingenious explanation.

The curiosity was circulated through the hands of all present, and every virtuoso, in his turn, licked the copper, and rung it upon the hearth, declaring his assent to the judgment which had been pronounced. At length it fell under the inspection of our young gentleman; who, though no antiquarian, was very well acquainted with the current coin of his own country, and no sooner cast his eyes upon the valuable antique, than he affirmed, without hesitation, that it was no other than the ruins of an English farthing, and that same spear, parazonium, and multicium, the remains of the emblems and drapery with which the figure of Britannia is delineated on our copper money.

This hardy asseveration seemed to disconcert the patron, while it incensed the medalist, who grinning like an enraged baboon, "What d'ye tell me of a brass farthing?" said he. "Did you ever know modern brass of such a relish? Do but taste it, young gentleman; and sure I am, if you have ever been conversant with subjects of this kind, you will find as wide a difference in the savour between this and an English farthing, as can possibly be perceived betwixt an onion and a turnip: besides, this medal has the true Corinthian ring; then the attitude is upright, whereas that of Britannia is reclining; and how is it possible to mistake a branch of palm for a parazonium?"

All the rest of the company espoused the virtuoso's side of the question, because the reputation of each was concerned. The patron finding himself in the same circumstance, assumed a solemnity of feature, dashed with a small mixture of displeasure; and told Peregrine, that as he had not made that branch of literature his particular study, he was not surprized to see him mistaken in his opinion. Pickle immediately understood the reproof. Though he was shocked at the

vanity

anity or infatuation of his entertainer and fellow-gueſts,
ſked pardon for his preſumption, which was accord-
ngly excuſed, in conſideration of his inexperience; and
he Engliſh farthing dignified with the title of a true
ntique.

The next perſon that addreſſed himſelf to the chief was
gentleman of a very mathematical turn, who valued
mſelf upon the improvements he had made in ſeveral
meſtick machines, and now preſented the plan of a
w contrivance for cutting cabbages, in ſuch a man-
r as would ſecure the ſtock againſt the rotting rain,
d enable it to produce a plenteous after crop of de-
cious ſprouts. In this important machine he had
nited the whole mechanick powers, with ſuch maſſy
mplication of iron and wood, that it could not have
en moved without the aſſiſtance of an horſe, and a road
de for the conveniency of the draught. Theſe ob-
ions were ſo obvious, that they occurred at firſt ſight
the inſpector general, who greatly commended the
ention, which, he obſerved, might be applied to ſe-
al other uſeful purpoſes, could it once be rendered a
tle more portable and commodious.

The inventor, who had not foreſeen theſe difficulties,
s not prepared to ſurmount them; but he took the
nt in good part, and promiſed to taſk his abilities
ew, in altering the conſtitution of his deſign. Not
t that he underwent ſome ſevere irony from the reſt
the virtuoſi, who complimented him upon the mo-
entous improvement he had made, by which a family
ight ſave a diſh of greens in a quarter, for ſo trifling
expence as that of purchaſing, working and main-
ning, ſuch a ſtupendous machine: but no man was
er more ſarcaſtick in his remark upon this piece of
chaniſm than the naturaliſt, who next appealed to
patron's approbation for a curious diſquiſition he
d made touching the procreation of muck flies, in
ich he had laid down a curious method of collecting,
ſerving, and hatching, the eggs of theſe inſects,
n in the winter, by certain modifications of artificial
heat.

heat. The nature of this diſcovery was no ſooner communicated, than Peregrine, unable to contain himſelf, was ſeized with a fit of laughter, which infected every perſon at the table, the landlord himſelf not excepted, who found it impoſſible to preſerve his wonted gravity of face.

Such unmannerly mirth did not fail to mortify the philoſopher; who, after ſome pauſe, during which, indignation and diſdain were painted in his countenance, reprehended our young gentleman for his unphiloſophical behaviour, and undertook to prove, that the ſubject of his enquiry was of infinite conſequence to the progreſs and increaſe of natural knowledge: but he found no quarter from the vengeful engineer, who now returned his ironical compliments with great emphaſis, upon this hot-bed for the generation of vermin, and give him a place among their memoirs, as a diſtinguiſhed promoter of the uſeful arts. "If," ſaid he, "you had employed your ſtudies in finding out ſome effectual method to deſtroy thoſe inſects which prejudice and annoy mankind, in all probability you muſt have been contented with the contemplation of the good you had done; but this curious expedient for multiplying maggots, will ſurely intitle you to an honourable rank in the liſt of learned philoſophers."—"I don't wonder," replied the naturaliſt, "that you ſhould be ſo much averſe to the propagation of inſects, becauſe, in all likelihood, you are afraid that they will not leave you a cabbage to cut down with the ſame miraculous machine."—"Sir," anſwered the mechanick, with great bitterneſs of voice and aſpect, "if the cabbage be as light-headed as ſome muck-worm philoſophers, it will not be worth cutting down."—"I never diſpute upon cabbage with the ſon of a cucumber," ſaid the fly-breeder, alluding to the pedigree of his antagoniſt; who, impatient of the affront, ſtarted up with fury in his looks, exclaiming, "'Sdeath! meaning me, Sir?"

Here the patron, perceiving things drawing towards a rupture, interpoſed his authority, rebuking them the[m]

their intemperance, and recommending to them amity and concord againſt the Goths and Vandals of the age, who took all opportunities of ridiculing and diſcouraging the adherents of knowledge and philoſophy. After this exhortation, they had no pretence for carrying on the diſpute, which was dropped in all appearance, though the mechanick ſtill retained his reſentment; and after breakfaſt, when the company broke up, accoſted his adverſary in the ſtreet, deſiring to know how he durſt be ſo inſolent as to make that ſcurrilous reflection upon his family. The fly-fancier, thus queſtioned, accuſed the mathematician of having been the aggreſſor, in likening his head to a light cabbage; and here the altercation being renewed, the engineer proceeded to the illuſtration of his mechanicks, tilting up his hand like a balance, thruſting it forward by way of lever, embracing the naturaliſt's noſe like a wedge betwixt two of his fingers, and turning it round with the momentum of a ſcrew or peritrochium. Had they been obliged to decide the diſpute with equal arms, the aſſailant would have had great advantage over the other, who was very much his inferior in muſcular ſtrength; but the philoſopher being luckily provided with a cane, no ſooner diſengaged himſelf from this opprobrious application, than he handled his weapon with great dexterity about the head and ſhoulders of his antagoniſt; who finding this ſhower of blows very diſagreeable, was fain to betake himſelf to his heels for ſhelter, and was purſued by the angry victor, who chaſed him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, affording unſpeakable ſatisfaction to the multitude, as well as to our hero and to his introductor, who were ſpectators of the whole ſcene.

Thus was our adventurer initiated in the ſociety of Yelpers, though he did not as yet fully [illegible] nature of his office, which was e[illegible] phyſician, who chid him for his [illegible] caſe of the medal; and gave him to underſtand, that their patron's favour was neither to be gained nor preſerved

by

by any man that would pretend to convict him of a miſtake: he therefore counſelled him to reſpect this foible, and cultivate the old gentleman with all the zeal and veneration which a regard to his own character would permit him to pay. This taſk was the eaſier to one of our young gentleman's pliant diſpoſition, becauſe the virtuoſo's behaviour was abſolutely free from that inſolent ſelf-conceit, which he could not bear without diſguſt; the ſenior was, on the contrary, mild and beneficent; and Pickle was rather pleaſed than ſhocked at his weakneſs, becauſe it flattered his vanity with the ſuppoſition of his own ſuperior ſenſe.

Cautioned in this manner, Peregrine profited ſo much by his inſinuating qualifications, that, in a very little time, he was looked upon as one of the chief favourites of the patron, to whom he dedicated a ſmall occaſional poem; and every body believed he would reap the fruits of his attachment among the firſt of the old gentleman's dependants.

CHAP. XI.

Peregrine finding himſelf neglected by Sir Steady Steerwell, expoſtulates with him in a Letter; in Conſequence of which, he is forbid his Houſe, loſes his Penſion, and incurs the Charge of Lunacy.

THIS proſpect of ſucceſs, together with his expectations from the miniſter, whom he did not neglect, helped to comfort him under the reverſe of fortune which he had undergone, and the uncertainty of the lawſuit, which he ſtill maintained for the recovery of his ten thouſand pounds. The lawyers, indeed, continued to drain his pocket of money, while they filled his brain with unſubſtantial hope; and he was actually obliged to borrow money from his bookſeller, on the ſtrength of the tranſlation, in order to ſatisfy the demands of those ravenous harpies, rather than lay the miſanthrope under any difficulties, or have recourſe to his friend Hatchway, who lived at the garriſon, entirely ignorant of his diſtreſs. This [illegible] was not at all alleviated by the arrival of the Indiaman [illegible] in which he had adventured ſeven

ſeven hundred pounds, as we have already obſerved; for he was given to underſtand, that the borrower was left dangerouſly ill at Bombay when the ſhip failed, and that his chance for retrieving his money was extremely ſlender.

So ſituated, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he led a life of tranquillity, though he made a ſhift to ſtruggle with the remonſtrances of misfortune: yet ſuch a guſh of affliction would ſometimes ruſh upon his thoughts, as overwhelmed all the ideas of his hope, and ſunk him to the very bottom of deſpondence. Every equipage that paſſed him in the ſtreet, every perſon of rank and fortune that occurred to his view, recalled the gay images of his former life, with ſuch mortifying reflection as ſtabbed him to the very ſoul. He lived, therefore, inceſſantly expoſed to all the pangs of envy and diſquiet. When I ſay envy, I do not mean that ſordid paſſion, in conſequence of which a man repines at his neighbour's ſucceſs, howſoever deſerved; but that ſelf-tormenting indignation which is inſpired by the proſperity of folly, ignorance, and vice. Without the intervening gleams of enjoyment, which he felt in the converſation of a few friends, he could not have ſupported his exiſtence; or, at leaſt, he muſt have ſuffered ſome violent diſcompoſure of the brain: but one is ſtill finding ſome circumſtance of alleviation, even in the worſt of conjectures; and Pickle was ſo ingenious in theſe reſearches, that he maintained a good battle with diſappointment, till the revolution of the term at which he had received his penſion of three hundred pounds.

However, ſeeing the day elapſe, without touching his allowance, notwithſtanding his ſignificant method of preſenting himſelf at the miniſter's levee, when the year was expired he wrote a letter to Sir Steady, reminding him of his ſituation and promiſe, and giving him to underſtand, that his occaſions were ſuch as compelled him to demand his ſalary for the enſuing year.

In the morning after this letter was conveyed, the

author went to his honour's houſe, in expectation of being admitted by particular order; but was miſtaken in his hope, the miniſter not being viſible. He then made his appearance at the levee, in hopes of being cloſeted; but though he took all opportunities of watching Sir Steady's eyes, he could not obtain one glance, and had the pleaſure of ſeeing him retire, without being favoured with the leaſt notice. Theſe circumſtances of wilful neglect were not over and above agreeable to our young hero, who, in the agonies of vexation and reſentment, went home, and compoſed a moſt acrimonious remonſtrance to his honour; in conſequence of which he was not only deprived of all pretenſions to a private audience, but expreſsly denied admittance on a public day, by Sir Steady's own order.

This prohibition, which announced his total ruin, filled him with rage, horror, and deſpair: he inſulted the porter who ſignified the miniſter's command, threatening to chaſtiſe him upon the ſpot for his preſumption, and vented the moſt virulent imprecations upon his maſter, to the aſtoniſhment of thoſe who chanced to enter during this conference. Having exhauſted himſelf in theſe vain exclamations, he returned to his lodgings in a moſt frantick condition, biting his lips ſo that the blood ran from his mouth, daſhing his head and fiſts againſt the ſides of his chimney, and weeping with the moſt bitter expreſſions of woe.

Pipes, whoſe perception had been juſt ſufficient to let him ſee that there was ſome difference between the preſent and former ſituation of his maſter, over-hearing his tranſports, eſſayed to enter his apartment, with a view of adminiſtering conſolation; and finding the door locked on the inſide, deſired admittance, proteſting that otherwiſe he would down with the bulk head in the turning of an handſpike. Peregrine ordered him to retire, on pain of his diſpleaſure, and ſwore that if he ſhould offer to break open the door, he would inſtantly ſhoot him through the head. Tom, without paying the leaſt regard to this injunction, ſet himſelf at work

immediately. His maſter, exaſperated at his want of reverence and reſpect, which in his preſent paroxiſm appeared with the moſt provoking aggravation, flew into his cloſet, and ſnatching up one of his piſtols already loaded, no ſooner ſaw his valet enter the apartment, in conſequence of having forced the lock, than he preſented full at his face, and drew the trigger. Happily the priming flaſhed in the pan, without communicating with the charge; ſo that his furious purpoſe did not take effect upon the countenance of honeſt Pipes; who, diſregardful of the attempt, though he knew the contents of the piece, aſked, without the leaſt alteration of feature, if it muſt be foul weather through the whole voyage.

Peregrine, mad as he was, repented of his miſchievous intent againſt ſuch a faithful adherent, in the very moment of execution; and had it proved fatal, according to the deſign, in all probability he would have applied another to his own head. There are certain conſiderations that ſtrike upon the mind with irreſiſtible force, even in the midſt of it's diſtraction; the momentary recollection of ſome particular ſcene occaſioned by the features of the devoted victim, hath often ſtruck the dagger from the aſſaſſin's hand. By ſuch an impulſe was Pipes protected from any repeated effort of his maſter's rage; the friendly cauſe of his preſent diſobedience flaſhed upon the conviction of Peregrine, when he beheld the rugged front of his valet, in which alſo ſtood diſcloſed his long and faithful ſervice, together with the recommendation of the deceaſed commodore.

Though his wrath was immediately ſuppreſſed, and his heart torn with remorſe for what he had done, his brows remained ſtill contracted; and darting a moſt ferocious regard at the intruder, 'Villain!' ſaid he, 'how dare you treat me with ſuch diſreſpect?'—'Why ſhouldn't I lend a hand for the preſervation of the ſhip,' anſwered the unruffled Pipes, 'when there is more ſail than ballaſt aboard, and the pilot quits the helm in deſpair? What ſignifies one or two broken voyages,

 ſo

ſo long as our timbers are ſtrong, and our veſſel in good trim; if ſhe loſes upon one tack, mayhap ſhe may gain upon t'other; and I'll be damn'd if one day or other we don't fetch up our lee-way; as for the matter of proviſion, you have ſtarted a pretty good ſtock of money into my hold, and you are welcome to hoiſt it up again when you wool?'

Here Tom was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Crabtree, who ſeeing Peregrine with a piſtol in his hand, and ſuch wild diſorder in his looks; his head, hands, and mouth, beſmeared with blood; and moreover, ſmelling the gun-powder which had been burnt; actually believed he had either committed, or was bent upon murder, and accordingly retreated down ſtairs with infinite diſpatch. All this ſpeed could not convey him without the reach of Pipes, who overtaking him in his paſſage, carried him back into his maſter's apartment, obſerving by the way, that this was no time to ſheer off when his conſort ſtood in need of his aſſiſtance.

There was ſomething ſo ruefully ſevere in the countenance of Cadwallader, thus compelled, that at any other time our hero would have laughed at his concern; but at preſent there was nothing riſible in his diſpoſition: he had, however, laid aſide his piſtol, and endeavoured, though in vain, to compoſe his internal diſturbance; for he could not utter one ſyllable to the miſanthrope, but ſtood ſtaring at him in ſilence, with a moſt delirious aſpect. This did not tend to diſpel the diſmay of his friend; who, after ſome recollection—'I wonder,' ſaid he, 'that you have never killed your man before. Pray how may you have diſpoſed of the body?' Pickle having recovered the faculty of ſpeech, ordered his lacquey out of the room, and in a moſt incoherent detail, made Crabtree acquainted with the perfidious conduct of the miniſter.

The confidante was very glad to find his fears diſappointed; for he had really concluded that ſome life was loſt. Perceiving the youth too much agitated to

be treated by him in his usual style, he owned that Sir Steady was a rascal; encouraged Pickle with the hope of being one day able to make reprisals upon him; in the mean time offered him money for his immediate occasions; exhorting him to exert his own qualifications in rendering himself independent of such miscreants; and finally counselled him to represent his wrongs to the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged, with a view of interesting that peer in his behalf, or at least of obtaining an explanation from the minister, that he might take no premature measures of revenge.

These admonitions were so much milder and more agreeable than our hero expected from the misanthrope, that they had a very favourable effect upon his transports, which gradually subsided, until he became so tractable as to promise that he would conform to his advice; in consequence of which he next morning waited upon his lordship, who received him very politely, as usual, and with great patience heard his complaint, which, by the bye, he could not repeat without some hasty ebullitions of passionate resentment. This peer, after having gently disapproved of the letter of expostulation, which had produced such unfortunate effects, kindly undertook to recommend his case to the minister, and actually performed his promise that same day, when Sir Steady informed him, to his utter astonishment, that the poor young gentleman was disordered in his brain, so that he could not possibly be provided for in a place of importance with any regard to the service; and it could not be expected that he (Sir Steady) would support his extravagance from his own private purse: that he had, indeed, at the solicitation of a nobleman deceased, made him a present of three hundred pounds, in consideration of some loss that he pretended to have sustained in an election; but since that time had perceived in him such indisputable marks of lunacy, both by his distracted letters and personal behaviour, as obliged him to give order, that he should not be admitted into the house. To corroborate this assertion,

aſſertion, the miniſter actually called in the evidence of his own porter, and one of the gentlemen of his houſhold, who had heard the execrations that eſcaped our youth when he firſt found himſelf excluded. In ſhort, the nobleman was convinced, that Peregrine was certainly and *bona fide* mad as a March hare; and, by the help of this intimation, began to recollect ſome ſymptoms of diſtraction which appeared in his laſt viſit; he remembered a certain incoherence in his ſpeech, a violence of geſture and wildneſs of look, that now evidently denoted a diſturbed underſtanding; and he determined for his own credit and ſecurity, to diſentangle himſelf from ſuch a dangerous acquaintance.

With this view, he, in imitation of Sir Steady, commanded his gate to be ſhut againſt our adventurer; ſo that when he went to know the reſult of his lordſhip's conference with the miniſter, the door was flung in his face, and the janitor told him, through an iron grate, that he needed not to give himſelf the trouble of calling again, for his lord deſired to be excuſed from ſeeing him. He ſpoke not a word in anſwer to this declaration, which he immediately imputed to the ill offices of the miniſter, againſt whom he breathed defiance and revenge, in his way to the lodgings of Cadwallader; who being made acquainted with the manner of his reception, begged he would deſiſt from all ſchemes of vengeance, until he (Crabtree) ſhould be able to unriddle the myſtery of the whole, which he did not doubt of unveiling by means of his acquaintance with a family in which his lordſhip often ſpent the evening at whiſt.

It was not long before he had the deſired opportunity; the nobleman being under no injunctions or obligation to keep the affair ſecret, diſcovered the young gentleman's misfortune, by way of news, to the firſt company in which he happened to be; and Peregrine's name was not ſo obſcure in the faſhionable world, but that his diſorder became the general topick of converſation for a day; ſo that his friend ſoon partook of the intelligence,

intelligence, and found means to learn the particulars of the minifter's information as above related. Nay, he was in danger of becoming a profelyte to Sir Steady's opinion, when he recalled and compared every circumftance which he knew of Pickle's impatience and impetuofity.

Indeed, nothing more eafily gains credit than an imputation of madnefs fixed upon any perfon whatfoever: for when the fufpicion of the world is rouzed, and it's obfervation once fet at work, the wifeft, the cooleft man upon earth, will, by fome particulars in his behaviour, convict himfelf of the charge: every fingularity in his drefs and manner (and fuch are obfervable in every perfon) that before paffed unheeded, now rifes up in judgment againft him, with all the exaggeration of the obferver's fancy; and the fagacious examiner perceives diftraction in every glance of the eye, turn of the finger, and motion of the head: when he fpeaks, there is a ftrange peculiarity in his argument and expreffion; when he holds his tongue, his imagination teems with fome extravagant reverie; his fobriety of demeanor is no other than a lucid interval, and his paffion mere delirium.

If people of the moft fedate and infipid life and converfation are fubject to fuch criticifms, no wonder, then, they fhould take place upon a youth of Peregrine's fiery difpofition, which, on fome occafions, would have actually juftified any remarks of this kind which his greateft enemies could make. He was accordingly prefented as one of thofe enterprizing bucks, who, after having fpent their fortunes in riot and excefs, are happily bereft of their underftanding, and confequently infenfible of the want and difgrace which they have entailed upon themfelves.

Cadwallader himfelf was fo much affected with the report, that for fome time he hefitated in his deliberations upon our hero, before he could prevail upon himfelf to communicate to him the information he had received, or to treat him in other refpects as a man of

found

found intellects. At length, however, he ventured to make Pickle acquainted with the particulars he had learned, imparting them with ſuch caution and circumlocution, as he thought neceſſary to prevent the young gentleman from tranſgreſſing all bounds of temper and moderation: but, for once, he was agreeably deceived in his prognoſtick. Incenſed as our hero was at the conduct of the miniſter, he could not help laughing at the ridiculous aſperſion, which he told his friend he would ſoon refute in a manner that ſhould not be very agreeable to his calumniator; obſerving, that it was a common practice with the ſtate pilot thus to ſlander thoſe people to whom he lay under obligations which he had no mind to diſcharge. True it is,' ſaid Peregrine, 'he has ſucceeded more than once in contrivances of this kind, having actually reduced divers people of weak heads to ſuch extremity of deſpair, as hath iſſued in downright diſtraction, whereby he was rid of their importunities, and his judgment confirmed at the ſame time: but I have now (thank Heaven!) attained to ſuch a pitch of philoſophical reſolution, as will ſupport me againſt all his machinations; and I will forthwith exhibit the monſter to the publick, in his true lineaments of craft, perfidy, and ingratitude.'

This indeed was the plan with which Mr. Pickle had amuſed himſelf during the reſearches of Crabtree; and by this time it ſo effectually flattered his imagination, that he believed he ſhould be able to bring his adverſary (in ſpite of all his power) to his own terms of ſubmiſſion, by diſtinguiſhing himſelf in the liſt of thoſe who, at that period, wrote againſt the adminiſtration. Nor was this ſcheme ſo extravagant as it may ſeem to be, had he not overlooked one material circumſtance, which Cadwallader himſelf did not recollect when he approved of this project.

While he thus meditated vengeance, the fame of his diſorder, in due courſe of circulation, reached the ears of that lady of quality, whoſe memoirs have appeared in the third volume of theſe adventures. The correſ-

pondence

pondence with which ſhe had honoured our hero had been long broke off, for the reaſon already advanced, namely, his dread of being expoſed to her infatuating charms. He had been candid enough to make her acquainted with the cauſe of exiling himſelf from her preſence; and ſhe admitted the prudence of ſelf-reſtraint, although ſhe would have been well very ſatisfied with the continuance of his intimacy and converſation, which were not at all beneath the deſire of any lady in the kingdom. Notwithſtanding this interruption, ſhe ſtill retained a friendſhip and regard for his character, and felt all the affliction of a humane heart, at the news of his misfortune and deplorable diſtemper. She had ſeen him courted and cultivated in the ſun-ſhine of his proſperity; but ſhe knew, from ſad experience, how all thoſe inſect followers ſhrink away in the winter of diſtreſs. Her compaſſion repreſented him as a poor unhappy lunatick, deſtitute of all the neceſſaries of life, dragging about the ruins of human nature, and exhibiting the ſpectacle of blaſted youth, to the ſcorn and abhorrence of his fellow-creatures. Aching with theſe charitable conſiderations, ſhe found means to learn in what part of the town he lodged; and laying aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony, went in a hackney-chair to his door, which was opened by his ever faithful Pipes.

Her ladyſhip immediately recollected the features of his truſty follower, whom ſhe could not help loving in her heart, for his attachment and fidelity; which, after ſhe had applauded with a moſt gracious commendation, ſhe kindly enquired after the ſtate of his maſter's health, and aſked if he was in a condition to be ſeen.

Tom, who could not ſuppoſe that the viſit of a fine lady would be unacceptable to a youth of Peregrine's complexion, made no verbal reply to the queſtion; but beckoning her ladyſhip with an arch ſignificance of feature, at which ſhe could not forbear ſmiling, walked ſoftly up ſtairs; and ſhe, in obedience to the ſignal, followed her guide into the apartment of our hero, whom ſhe found at a writing-table, in the very act of

compoſing

compoſing an eulogium upon his good friend Sir Steady. The nature of his work had animated his countenance with an uncommon degree of vivacity; and being dreſſed in a neat diſhabille, his figure could not have appeared to more advantage in the eye of a perſon who deſpiſed the tinſel of unneceſſary ornament. She was extremely well pleaſed to ſee her expectations ſo agreeably diſappointed; for, inſtead of the ſqualid circumſtances and wretched looks attending indigence and diſtraction, every thing was decent and genteel, and the patient's aſpect ſuch as betokened internal ſatisfaction. Hearing the ruſtling of ſilk in the room, he lifted up his eyes from the paper, and ſeeing her ladyſhip, was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment and awe, as at the unexpected apparition of ſome ſupernatural being.

Before he could recollect himſelf from his confuſion, which called the blood into his cheeks, ſhe told him, that, on the ſtrength of old acquaintance, ſhe was come to viſit him, though it was a long time ſince he had given her good reaſon to believe he had abſolutely forgot that there was ſuch a perſon as ſhe in being. After having made the moſt warm acknowledgments for this unforeſeen honour, he aſſured her ladyſhip, that the ſubject of her reproach was not his fault, but rather his very great misfortune; and that if it had been in his power to forget her ſo eaſily as ſhe ſeemed to imagine, he ſhould never have given her cauſe to tax him with want of duty and reſpect.

Still dubious of his ſituation, ſhe began to converſe with him on different ſubjects; and he acquitted himſelf ſo well in every particular, that ſhe no longer doubted his having been miſrepreſented by the malice of his enemies; and candidly told him the cauſe and intent of her coming. He was not deficient in expreſſions of gratitude for this inſtance of her generoſity and friendſhip, which even drew tears from his eyes. As to the imputation of madneſs, he explained it ſo much to her ladyſhip's ſatisfaction, that ſhe evidently perceived he had been barbarouſly dealt with, and that

the

J. Allen delin. Printed for C. Cooke [illegible] J. Saunders, sculp.

the charge was no other than a moſt villainous aſperſion.

Notwithſtanding all his endeavours to conceal the true ſtate of his finances, it was impoſſible for him to give this detail without diſcloſing ſome of the difficulties under which he laboured; and her ladyſhip's ſagacity divining the reſt, ſhe not only made him a tender of aſſiſtance, but preſented a bank-note for a conſiderable ſum, inſiſting upon his acceptance of it, as a trifling mark of her eſteem, and a ſpecimen of what ſhe was inclined to do in his behalf. But this mark of her benevolence he would by no means receive; aſſuring her that though his affairs were at preſent a little perplexed, he had never felt the leaſt circumſtance of diſtreſs, and begging that ſhe would not ſubject him to the burden of ſuch an unneceſſary obligation.

Being obliged to put up with this refuſal, ſhe proteſted ſhe would never forgive him, ſhould ſhe ever hear that he had rejected her offer when he ſtood in need of her aid; or if in time to come, he ſhould not apply to her friendſhip, if ever he ſhould find himſelf incommoded in point of fortune: 'An over-delicacy in this reſpect,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall look upon as a diſapprobation of my own conduct; becauſe I myſelf have been obliged to have recourſe to my friends in ſuch emergencies.'

Theſe generous remonſtances and marks of particular friendſhip, could not fail to make a deep impreſſion upon the heart of our hero, which ſtill ſmarted from the former impulſe of her charms: he not only felt all thoſe tranſports which a man of honour and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel upon ſuch an occaſion, but the ſentiments of a more tender paſſion awaking in his breaſt, he could not help expreſſing himſelf in terms adapted to the emotions of his ſoul; and at length plainly told her, that were he diſpoſed to be a beggar, he would aſk ſomething of infinitely more importance to his peace, than the charitable aſſiſtance ſhe had proffered.

Her ladyſhip had too much penetration to miſtake his

his meaning but as ſhe did not chooſe to encourage his advances, pretended to interpret his intimation into a general compliment of gallantry, and in a jocoſe manner, deſired he would not give her any reaſon to believe his lucid interval was paſt. 'In faith, my lady,' ſaid he, 'I perceive the fit coming on; and I don't ſee why I may not uſe the privilege of my diſtemper, ſo far as to declare myſelf one of your moſt paſſionate admirers.' 'If you do,' replied her ladyſhip, 'I ſhall not be fool enough to believe a madman, unleſs I were aſſured that your diſorder proceeded from your love: and that this was the caſe, I ſuppoſe you will find it difficult to prove.'—'Nay, Madam,' cried the youth, 'I have in this drawer what will convince you of my having been mad on that ſtrain; and ſince you doubt my pretenſion, you muſt give me leave to produce my teſtimonials.' So ſaying, he opened a ſcrutore, and taking out a paper, preſented her with the following Song, which he had written in her praiſe, immediately after he was made acquainted with the particulars of her ſtory.

I.

WHILE with fond rapture and amaze,
On thy tranſcendent charms I gaze,
My cautious ſoul eſſays in vain
Her peace and freedom to maintain:
Yet let that blooming form divine,
Where grace and harmony combine;
Thoſe eyes, like genial orbs that move,
Diſpenſing gladneſs, joy, and love;
In all their pomp aſſail my view,
Intent my boſom to ſubdue;
My breaſt, by wary maxims ſteel'd,
Not all thoſe charms ſhall force to yield.

II.

But when, invok'd to beauty's aid,
I ſee th' enlighten'd ſoul diſplay'd;
That ſoul, ſo ſenſibly ſedate
Amid the ſtorms of froward fate!
Thy genius active, ſtrong and clear,
Thy wit ſublime, tho' not ſevere;

The social ardour, void of art,
That glows within thy candid heart;
My spirits, sense, and strength decay,
My resolution dies away;
And, ev'ry faculty oppress'd,
Almighty Love invades my breast!

Her ladyship having perused this production; 'Were I inclined to be suspicious,' said she, 'I should believe that I had no share in producing this composition, which seems to have been inspired by a much more amiable object. However, I will take your word for your intention, and thank you for the unmerited compliment, though I have met with it in such an accidental manner. Nevertheless, I must be so free as to tell you, it is now high time for you to contract that unbounded spirit of gallantry, which you have indulged so long, into a sincere attachment for the fair Emilia, who, by all accounts, deserves the whole of your attention and regard.' His nerves thrilled at the mention of that name, which he never heard pronounced without agitation. Rather than undergo the consequence of a conversation upon this subject, he chose to drop the theme of love altogether, and industriously introduced some other topick of discourse.

CHAP. XII.

He writes against the Minister, by whose Instigation he is arrested, and moves himself by Habeas Corpus, into the Fleet.

MY lady having prolonged her stay beyond the period of a common visit, and repeated her protestations in the most frank and obliging manner, took her leave of our adventurer, who promised to pay his respects to her in a few days at her own house. Meanwhile, he resumed his task; and having finished a most severe remonstrance against Sir Steady, not only with regard to his private ingratitude, but also to his maladministration of publick affairs, he sent to the author of a weekly paper, who had been long a professed reformer in politicks; and it appeared in a very few days,

with a note of the publisher, desiring the favour of farther correspondence with the author.

The animadversions contained in this small essay were so spirited and judicious, and a great many new lights thrown upon the subject with such perspicuity, as attracted the notice of the publick in an extraordinary manner, and helped to raise the character of the paper in which it was inserted. The minister was not the last who examined the performance, which, in spite of all his boasted temper, provoked him to such a degree, that he set his emissaries at work, and by dint of corruption, procured a sight of the manuscript in Peregrine's own hand-writing, which he immediately recognized; but for farther confirmation of his opinion, he compared it with the two letters which he had received from our adventurer. Had he known the young gentleman's talents for declamation were so acute, perhaps he would never have given him cause to complain, but employed him in the vindication of his own measures; nay, he might still have treated him like some other authors whom he had brought over from the opposition, had not the keenness of this first assault incensed him to a desire of revenge. He, therefore, no sooner made this discovery, than he conveyed his directions to his dependant the receiver-general, who was possessed of Pickle's notes. Next day, while our author stood within a circle of his acquaintance, at a certain coffee-house, holding forth with great eloquence upon the diseases of the state, he was accosted by a bailiff, who entering the room with five or six followers, told him aloud, that he had a writ against him for twelve hundred pounds, at the suit of Mr. Ravage Gleanum.

The whole company were astonished at this address, which did not fail to discompose the defendant himself, who (as it were instinctively) in the midst of his confusion, saluted the officer across the head with his cane; in consequence of which application he was surrounded and disarmed in an instant by the gang, who carried him

him off to the next tavern in the moſt opprobrious manner. Nor did one of the ſpectators interpoſe in his behalf, or viſit him in his confinement with the leaſt tender of advice or aſſiſtance; ſuch is the zeal of a coffee-houſe friendſhip.

This ſtroke was the more ſevere upon our hero, as it was altogether unexpected: for he had utterly forgot the debt for which he was arreſted. His preſent indignation was, however, chiefly kindled againſt the bailiff, who had done his office in ſuch a diſreſpectful manner: and the firſt uſe he made of his recollection in the houſe to which they conducted him, was to chaſtiſe him for the inſolence and indecency of his behaviour. This taſk he performed with his bare fiſts, every other weapon being previouſly conveyed out of his reach; and the delinquent underwent his diſcipline with ſurpriſing patience and reſignation, aſking pardon with great humility, and proteſting before God, that he had never willingly and wittingly uſed any gentleman with ill-manners, but had been commanded to arreſt our adventurer according to the expreſs direction of the creditor, on pain of forfeiting his place.

By this declaration Peregrine was appeaſed, and out of a delirium of paſſion waked to all the horrors of reflection. All the glory of his youth was now eclipſed, all the bloſſoms of his hope were blaſted, and he ſaw himſelf doomed to the miſeries of a gaol, without the leaſt proſpect of enlargement, except in the iſſue of his law-ſuit, of which he had, for ſome time paſt, grown leſs and leſs confident every day. What would become of the unfortunate, if the conſtitution of the mind did not permit them to bring one paſſion into the field againſt another! paſſions that operate on the human breaſt, like poiſons of a different nature, extinguiſhing each other's effect. Our hero's grief reigned in full deſpotiſm, until it was depoſed by revenge; during the predominancy of which, he conſidered every thing which had happened as a circumſtance conducive to it's gratification: 'If I muſt be a priſoner for life,' ſaid

he to himſelf, ‘ if I muſt relinquiſh all my gay expectations, let me at leaſt have the ſatisfaction of clanking my chains ſo as to interrupt the repoſe of my adverſary; and let me ſearch in my own breaſt for that peace and contentment which I have not been able to find in all the ſcenes of my ſucceſs. In being detached from the world, I ſhall be delivered from folly and ingratitude, as well as exempted from an expence, which I ſhould have found it very difficult, if not impracticable, to ſupport; I ſhall have little or no temptation to miſpend my time, and more undiſturbed opportunity to earn my ſubſiſtence, and proſecute my revenge. After all, a gaol is the beſt tub to which a cynick philoſopher can retire.’

In conſequence of theſe comfortable reflections, he ſent a letter to Mr. Crabtree, with an account of his misfortune, ſignifying his reſolution to move himſelf immediately into the Fleet, and deſiring that he would ſend him ſome underſtanding attorney of his acquaintance, who would direct him into the ſteps neceſſary to be taken for that purpoſe. The miſanthrope, upon the receipt of this intimation, went in perſon to a lawyer, whom he accompanied to the ſpunging-houſe, whither the priſoner had by this time retired. Peregrine was, under the auſpices of this director, conducted to the judges chamber, where he was left in the cuſtody of a tipſtaff; and after having paid for a warrant of Habeas Corpus, by him conveyed to the Fleet, and delivered to the care of the warden.

Here he was introduced to the lodge, in which he was obliged to expoſe himſelf a full hour to the eyes of all the turnkeys and door-keepers, who took an accurate ſurvey of his perſon, that they might know him again at firſt ſight: and then he was turned looſe into the place called the Maſter's Side, having given a valuable conſideration for that privilege. This is a large range of building, containing ſome hundreds of lodging-rooms for the convenience of the priſoners, who pay ſo much per week for that accommodation.

In

In ſhort, this community is like a city detached from all communication with the neighbouring parts, regulated by it's own laws, and furniſhed with peculiar conveniencies for the uſe of the inhabitants. There is a coffee-houſe for the reſort of gentlemen, in which all ſorts of liquors are kept, and a publick kitchen where any quantity of meat is ſold at a reaſonable rate, or any kind of proviſion boiled and roaſted gratis for the poor priſoners: nay, there are certain ſervants of the publick, who are obliged to go to market at the pleaſure of individuals, without fee or reward from thoſe who employ them; nor are they cooped up ſo as to be excluded from the benefit of freſh air, there being an open area of a conſiderable extent, adjacent to the building, on which they may exerciſe themſelves in walking, ſkittles, bowls, and a variety of other diverſions, according to the inclination of each.

Our adventurer being admitted a denizen of this community, found himſelf bewildered in the midſt of ſtrangers, who, by their appearance, did not at all prepoſſeſs him in their favour; and after having ſtrolled about the place with his friend Cadwallader, repaired to the coffee-houſe, in order to be farther informed of the peculiar cuſtoms which it was neceſſary for him to know.

There, while he endeavoured to pick up intelligence from the bar-keeper, he was accoſted by a perſon in canonicals, who very civilly aſked if he was a new-comer. Being anſwered in the affirmative, he gave him the ſalutation of welcome to the ſociety, and, with great hoſpitality, undertook to initiate him in the conſtitutions of the brotherhood. This humane clergyman gave him to underſtand, that his firſt care ought to be that of ſecuring a lodging; telling him, there was a certain number of apartments in the priſon let at the ſame price, though ſome were more commodious than others; and that when the better ſort became vacant, by the removal of their poſſeſſors, thoſe who ſucceeded in point of ſeniority had the privilege of occupying the

empty tenements preferable to the rest of the inhabitants, howsoever respectable they might otherwise be; that when the gaol was very much crouded, there was but one chamber allotted for two lodgers; but this was not considered as any great hardship upon the prisoners, because, in that case, there was always a sufficient number of males who willingly admitted the females to a share in their apartments and beds: not but that the time had been, when this expedient would not answer the occasion, because after a couple had been quartered in every room, there was a considerable residue still unprovided with lodging; so that for the time being, the last comers were obliged to take up their habitation in Mount Scoundrel, an apartment most miserably furnished, in which they lay promiscuously amidst filth and vermin, until they could be better accommodated in due course of rotation.

Peregrine hearing the description of this place, began to be very impatient about his night's lodging; and the parson perceiving his anxiety, conducted him, without loss of time, to the warden, who forthwith put him in possession of a paltry chamber, for which he agreed to pay half a crown a week. This point being settled, his director gave him account of the different methods of eating, either singly, in a mess, or at an ordinary; and advised him to chuse the last, as the most reputable, offering to introduce him next day to the best company in the Fleet, who always dined together in publick.

Pickle having thanked this gentleman for his civilities, and promised to be governed by his advice, invited him to pass the evening at his apartment; and in the mean time shut himself up with Crabtree, in order to deliberate upon the wreck of his affairs. Of all his ample fortune, nothing now remained but his wardrobe, which was not very sumptuous, about thirty guineas in cash, and the garrison, which the misanthrope counselled him to convert into ready money for his present subsistence. This advice, however, he ab-

solutely

folutely rejected, not only on account of his having already beftowed it upon Hatchway, during the term of his natural life, but alfo with a view of retaining fome memorial of the commodore's generofity. He propofed, therefore, to finifh in this retreat the tranflation which he had undertaken, and earn his future fubfiftence by labour of the fame kind. He defired Cadwallader to take charge of his moveables, and fend him fuch moveables and cloaths as he fhould have occafion for in his confinement. But, among all his difficulties, nothing embarraffed him fo much as his faithful Pipes, whom he could no longer entertain in his fervice. He knew Tom had made fhift to pick up a competency in the courfe of his miniftration; but that reflection, though it in fome meafure alleviated, could not wholly prevent the mortification he fhould fuffer in parting with an affectionate adherent, who was by this time become as neceffary to him as one of his own members, and who was fo accuftomed to live under his command and protection, that he did not believe the fellow could reconcile himfelf to any other way of life.

Crabtree, in order to make him eafy on that fcore, offered to adopt him in the room of his own valet, whom he would difmifs; though he obferved that Pipes had been quite fpoiled in our hero's fervice. But Peregrine did not chufe to lay his friend under that inconvenience, knowing that his prefent lacquey underftood and complied with all the peculiarities of his humour, which Pipes would never be able to ftudy or regard; he therefore determined to fend him back to his fhipmate Hatchway, with whom he fpent the fore part of his life.

Thefe points being adjufted, the two friends adjourned to the coffee-houfe, with a view of enquiring into the character of the clergyman, to whofe beneficence our adventurer was fo much indebted. They learned he was a perfon who had incurred the difpleafure of the bifhop in whofe diocefe he was fettled, and, being unequal in power to his antagonift, had been driven to

the Fleet, in consequence of his obstinate opposition though he still found means to enjoy a pretty consider able income, by certain irregular practices in the way of his function, which income was chiefly consumed in acts of humanity to his fellow-creatures in distress.

His eulogium was scarce finished, when he entered the room, according to appointment with Peregrine, who ordering wine and something for supper to be carried to his apartment, the triumvirate went thither; and Cadwallader taking his leave for the night, the two fellow-prisoners passed the evening very sociably, our hero being entertained by his new companion with the private history of the place, some particulars of which were extremely curious. He told him, that the person who attended them at supper, bowing with the most abject servility, and worshipping them every time he opened his mouth, with the epithets of *your lordship* and *your honour*, had, a few years before, been actually a captain in the guards; who, after having run his career in the great world, had threaded every station in their community, from that of a buck of the first order, who swaggers about the Fleet in a laced coat with a footman and a whore, to the degree of a tapster, in which he was now happily settled. 'If you will take the trouble of going into the cook's kitchen,' said he, 'you will perceive a beau metamorphosed into a turn-spit; and there are some hewers of wood and drawers of water in this microcosm, who have had forests and fish-ponds of their own: yet notwithstanding such a miserable reverse of fortune, they are neither objects of regard or compassion, because their misfortunes are the fruits of the most vicious extravagance, and they are absolutely insensible of the misery which is their lot. Those of our fellow-sufferers who have been reduced by undeserved losses, or the precipitation of unexperienced youth, never fail to meet with the most brotherly assistance, provided they behave with decorum, and a due sense of their unhappy circumstances. Nor are we destitute of power to chastise the licentious, who

refuse

refuſe to comply with the regulations of the place, and diſturb the peace of the community with riot and diſorder. Juſtice is here impartially adminiſtered by a court of equity, conſiſting of a ſelect number of the moſt reſpectable inhabitants, who puniſh all offenders with equal judgment and reſolution, after they have been fairly convicted of the crimes laid to their charge.'

The clergyman having thus explained the œconomy of the place, as well as the cauſe of his own confinement, began to diſcover ſigns of curioſity touching our hero's ſituation; and Pickle, thinking he could do no leſs for the ſatisfaction of a man who had treated him in ſuch an hoſpitable manner, favoured him with a detail of the circumſtances which produced his impriſonment: at the ſame time gratifying his reſentment againſt the miniſter, which delighted in recapitulating the injuries he had received. The parſon, who had been prepoſſeſſed in favour of our youth at firſt ſight, underſtanding what a conſiderable part he had acted on the ſtage of life, felt his veneration increaſe; and pleaſed with the opportunity of introducing a ſtranger of his conſequence to the club, left him to his repoſe or rather to ruminate on an event which he had not as yet ſeriouſly conſidered.

I might here, in imitation of ſome celebrated writers, furniſh out a page or two, with the reflections he made upon the inſtability of human affairs, the treachery of the world, and the temerity of youth; and endeavour to decoy the reader into a ſmile, by ſome quaint obſervation of my own, touching the ſagacious moralizer: but, beſides that I look upon this practice as an impertinent anticipation of the peruſer's thoughts, I have too much matter of importance upon my hands, to give the reader the leaſt reaſon to believe that I am driven to ſuch paltry ſhifts in order to eke out the volume. Suffice it then to ſay, our adventurer paſſed a very uneaſy night, not only from the thorny ſuggeſtions of his mind, but likewiſe from the anguiſh of his body, which

ſuffered from the hardneſs of his couch, as well as from the natural inhabitants thereof, that did not tamely ſuffer his intruſion.

In the morning he was waked by Pipes, who brought upon his ſhoulder a portmanteau filled with neceſſaries, according to the direction of Cadwallader; and toſſing it down upon the floor, regaled himſelf with a quid, without the leaſt manifeſtation of concern. After ſome pauſe—'You ſee, Pipes,' ſaid his maſter, 'to what I have brought myſelf.—' Ey, ey,' anſwered the valet, 'once the veſſel is on ſhore, what ſignifies talking? We muſt bear a hand to tow her off, if we can: if ſhe won't budge for all the anchors and capſtans aboard, after we have lightened her, by cutting away her maſts, and heaving her guns and cargo overboard, why, then, mayhap a briſk gale of wind, a tide, or current ſetting from ſhore, may float her again in the blaſt of a whiſtle. Here is two hundred and ten guineas by the tale, in this here canvaſs bag; and upon this ſcrap of paper—no, avaſt—that's my diſcharge from the pariſh for Moll Trundle—ey, here it is—an order for thirty pounds upon the what-d'ye-call'em in the city; and two tickets for twenty-five and eighteen, which I lent, d'ye ſee, to Sam Studding, to buy a cargo of rum, when he hoiſted the ſign of the Commodore at St. Catharine's.' So ſaying, he ſpread his whole ſtock upon the table, for the acceptance of Peregrine; who, being very much affected with this freſh inſtance of his attachment, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing he had been ſuch a good œconomiſt, and paid his wages up to that very day. He thanked him for his faithful ſervices; and, obſerving that he himſelf was no longer in a condition to maintain a domeſtick, adviſed him to retire to the garriſon, where he would be kindly received by his friend Hatchway, to whom he would recommend him in the ſtrongeſt terms.

Pipes looked blank at this unexpected intimation, to which he replied, that he wanted neither pay nor proviſion, but only to be employed as a tender; and that

that he would not steer his course for the garrison, unless his master would first take his lumber aboard. Pickle, however, peremptorily refused to touch a farthing of the money, which he commanded him to put up; and Pipes was so mortified at his refusal, that twisting the notes together, he threw them into the fire without hesitation, crying—"Damn the money!" The canvass bag, with it's contents, would have shared the same fate, had not Peregrine started up, and snatching the paper from the flames, ordered his valet to forbear, on pain of being banished for ever from his sight. He told him, that, for the present, there was a necessity for his being dismissed, and he discharged him accordingly; but if he would go and live quietly with the lieutenant, he promised, on the first favourable turn of his fortune, to take him again into his service. In the mean time, he gave him to understand, that he neither wanted, nor would make any use of his money, which he insisted upon his pocketing immediately, on pain of forfeiting all title to his favour.

Pipes was very much chagrined at these injunctions, to which he made no reply; but sweeping the money into his bag, stalked off, in silence, with a look of grief and mortification, which his countenance had never exhibited before. Nor was the proud heart of Pickle unmoved upon this occasion: he could scarce suppress his sorrow in the presence of Pipes: and, as soon as he was gone, it vented itself in tears.

Having no great pleasure in conversing with his own thoughts, he dressed himself with all convenient dispatch, being attended by one of the occasional valets of the place, who had formerly been a rich mercer in the city; and this operation being performed, he went to breakfast at the coffee-house, where he happened to meet with his friend the clergyman, and several persons of genteel appearance, to whom the doctor introduced him as a new mess-mate. By these gentlemen he was conducted to a place where they spent the forenoon in playing at fives, an exercise in which our hero took singular de-
light;

light: and about one o'clock a court was held, for the trial of two delinquents, who had tranſgreſſed the laws of honeſty and good order.

The firſt who appeared at the bar was an attorney, accuſed of having picked a gentleman's pocket of his handkerchief; and, the fact being proved by inconteſtible evidence, he received ſentence: in conſequence of which he was immediately carried to the publick pump, and ſubjected to a ſevere caſcade of cold water. This cauſe being diſcuſſed, they proceeded to the trial of the other offender, who was a lieutenant of a man of war, indicted for a riot, which he had committed in company with a female, not yet taken, againſt the laws of the place, and the peace of his fellow-priſoners. The culprit had been very obſtreperous, and abſolutely refuſed to obey the ſummons, with may expreſſions of contempt and defiance againſt the authority of the court; upon which the conſtables were ordered to bring him to the bar, *vi & armis*; and he was acordingly brought before the judge, after having made a moſt deſperate reſiſtance with a hanger, by which one of the officers was dangerouſly wounded. This outrage was ſuch an aggravation of his crime, that the court would not venture to decide upon it, but remitted him to the ſentence of the warden: who, by virtue of his dictatorial power, ordered the rioter to be loaded with irons, and confined in the ſtrong room, which is a diſmal dungeon, ſituated upon the ſide of the ditch, infeſted with toads and vermin, ſurcharged with noiſome damps, and impervious to the leaſt ray of light.

Juſtice being done upon theſe criminals, our adventurer and his company adjourned to the ordinary, which was kept at the coffee-houſe; and he found, upon enquiry, that his meſs-mates conſiſted of one officer, two under-writers, three projectors, an alchymiſt, an attorney, a parſon, a brace of poets, a baronet, and a knight of the bath. The dinner, though not ſumptuous, nor very elegantly ſerved up, was nevertheleſs ſubſtantial, and pretty well dreſſed; the wine was tolerable, and

and all the guests as chearful as if they had been utter strangers to calamity; so that our adventurer began to relish the company, and mix in the conversation, with that sprightliness and ease which were peculiar to his disposition. The repast being ended, the reckoning paid, and part of the gentlemen withdrawn to cards, or other avocations, those who remained, among whom Peregrine made one, agreed to spend the afternoon in conversation over a bowl of punch; and the liquor being produced, they passed the time very socially in various topicks of discourse, including many curious anecdotes relating to their own affairs. No man scrupled to own the nature of the debt for which he was confined, unless it happened to be some piddling affair; but on the contrary, boasted of the importance of the sum, as a circumstance that implied his having been a person of consequence in life; and he who had made the most remarkable escapes from bailiffs, was looked upon as a man of superior genius and address.

Among other extraordinary adventures of this kind, none was more romantick than the last elopement atchieved by the officer; who told them he had been arrested for a debt of two hundred pounds, at a time when he could not command as many pence, and conveyed to the bailiff's house, in which he continued a whole fortnight, moving his lodgings higher and higher, from time to time, in proportion to the decay of his credit; until, from the parlour, he made a regular ascent to the garret. There, while he ruminated on his next step, which would have been to the Marshalsea, and saw the night come on, attended with hunger and cold, the wind began to blow, and the tiles of the house rattled with the storm: his imagination was immediately struck with the idea of escaping unperceived, amidst the darkness and noise of the tempest, by creeping out of the window of his apartment, and making his way over the tops of the adjoining houses. Glowing with this prospect, he examined the passage, which, to his infinite mortification, he found grated with iron bars on the outside; but even

even this difficulty did not divert him from his purpoſe. Conſcious of his own ſtrength, he believed himſelf able to make an hole through the roof, which ſeemed to be ſlender and crazy; and on this ſuppoſition, he barricadoed the door with the whole furniture of the room; then, ſetting himſelf to work with a poker, he in a few minutes effected a paſſage for his hand, with which he gradually ſtripped off the boards and tiling, ſo as to open a ſally-port for his whole body, through which he fairly ſet himſelf free, groping his way towards the next tenement. Here, however, he met with an unlucky accident: his hat being blown off his head, chanced to fall into the court juſt as one of the bailiff's followers was knocking at the door; and this myrmidon recognizing it immediately, gave the alarm to his chief, who running up ſtairs to the garret, forced open the door in a twinkling, notwithſtanding the precautions which the priſoner had taken, and, with his attendant, purſued the fugitive through his own track. "After this chace had continued ſome time," ſaid the officer, "to the imminent danger of all three, I found my progreſs ſuddenly ſtopped by a ſky-light, through which I perceived ſeven taylors ſitting at work upon a board. Without the leaſt heſitation or previous notice, I plunged among them with my backſide foremoſt. Before they could recollect themſelves from the conſternation occaſioned by ſuch a ſtrange viſit, I told them my ſituation, and gave them to underſtand that there was no time to be loſt. One of the number, taking the hint, led me inſtantly down ſtairs, and diſmiſſed me at the ſtreet-door; while the bailiff and his follower, arriving at the breach, were deterred from entering by the brethren of my deliverer, who preſenting their ſhears, like a range of *chevaux de friſe*, commanded them to retire on pain of immediate death: and the catchpole, rather than riſk his carcaſe, conſented to diſcharge the debt, comforting himſelf with the hope of making me priſoner again. There, however, he was diſappointed: I kept ſnug, and laughed at his eſ-
cape-

cape-warrant, until I was ordered abroad with the regiment, when I conveyed myſelf in a hearſe to Graveſend, where I embarked for Flanders; but, being obliged to come over again on the recruiting ſervice, I was nabbed on another ſcore: and all the ſatisfaction my firſt captor has been able to obtain, is a writ of detainer; which, I believe, will fix me in this place, until the Parliament, in it's great goodneſs, ſhall think proper to diſcharge my debts by a new act of inſolvency.'

Every body owned, that the captain's ſucceſs was equal to the hardineſs of his enterprize, which was altogether in the ſtyle of a ſoldier: but one of the merchants obſerved, that he muſt have been a bailiff of ſmall experience, who would truſt a priſoner of that conſequence in ſuch an unguarded place. "If the captain," ſaid he, "had fallen into the hands of ſuch a cunning raſcal as the fellow that arreſted me, he would not have found it ſuch an eaſy matter to eſcape; for the manner in which I was caught, is, perhaps, the moſt extraordinary that ever was practiſed in theſe realms. You muſt know, gentlemen, I ſuffered ſuch loſſes by inſuring veſſels during the war, that I was obliged to ſtop payment, though my expectations were ſuch as encouraged me to manage one branch of buſineſs, without coming to any immediate compoſition with my creditors. In ſhort, I received conſignments from abroad as uſual; and that I might not be ſubject to the viſits of thoſe catchpoles, I never ſtirred abroad, but turning my firſt-floor into a warehouſe, ordered all my goods to be hoiſted up by a crane, fixed to the upper ſtory of my houſe. Divers were the ſtratagems practiſed by thoſe ingenious ferrets, with a view of decoying me from the walls of my fortification. I received innumerable meſſages from people who wanted to ſee me at certain taverns upon particular buſineſs: I was ſummoned into the country, to ſee my own mother, who was ſaid to be at the point of death. A gentlewoman, one night, was taken in labour on my threſhold: at another

another time, I was disturbed with the cry of murder in the street; and once I was alarmed by a false fire. But, being still upon my guard, I baffled all their attempts, and thought myself quite secure from their invention, when one of those blood-hounds, inspired, I believe, by the devil himself, contrived a snare by which I was at last entrapped. He made it his business to enquire into the particulars of my traffick; and understanding that, among other things, there were several chests of Florence entered at the custom-house on my behalf, he ordered himself to be enclosed in a box of the same dimensions, with air-holes in the bottom, for the benefit of breathing, and No. III, marked upon the cover; and being conveyed to my door in a cart among other goods, was, in his turn, hoisted up to my warehouse. where I stood with a hammer, in order to open the chests, that I might compare the contents with the invoice. You may guess my surprize and consternation, when, upon uncovering the box, I saw a bailiff rearing up his head, like Lazarus from the grave, and heard him declare that he had a writ against me for a thousand pounds. Indeed, I aimed the hammer at his head, but in the hurry of my confusion missed my mark; before I could repeat the blow, he started up with great agility, and executed his office in sight of several evidences, whom he had assembled in the street for that purpose; so that I could not possibly disentangle myself from the toil, without incurring an escape-warrant, from which I had no protection. But, had I known the contents of the chest, by all that's good! I would have ordered my porter to raise it up as high as the crane would permit, and then have cut the rope by accident.'

'That expedient,' said the knight with the red ribbon, 'would have discouraged him from such hazardous attempts for the future, and would have been an example *in terrorem* of all his brethren. The story puts me in mind of a deliverance atchieved by Tom Hackabout, a very stout, honest fellow, and old acquaint-

ance of mine, who had been so famous for maiming bailiffs, that anoher gentleman having been ill-used at a spunging-house, no sooner obtained his liberty, than, with a view of being revenged upon the landlord, he, for five shillings, bought one of Tom's notes, which sold at a very large discount, and taking out a writ upon it, put it into the hands of the bailiff who had used him ill. The catch-pole, after a diligent search, had an opportunity of executing the writ upon the defendant, who, without ceremony, broke one of his arms, fractured his scull, and belaboured him in such a manner, that he lay without sense or motion on the spot. By such exploits, this hero became so formidable, that no single bailiff would undertake to arrest him; so that he appeared in all publick places untouched. At length, however, several officers of the Marshalsea court entered into a confederacy against him; and two of the number, attended by three desperate followers, ventured to arrest him one day in the Strand, near Hungerford Market: he found it impossible to make resistance, because the whole gang sprung upon him at once, like so many tigers, and pinioned his arms so fast that he could not wag a finger. Perceiving himself fairly overpowered, he desired to be conducted forthwith to gaol, and was stowed in a boat accordingly: by that time they had reached the middle of the river, he found means to overset the wherry by accident, when every man consulted his own safety. As for Hackabout, to whom that element was quite familiar, he mounted astride upon the keel of the boat, and exhorted the bailiffs to swim for their lives; protesting, before God, that they had no other chance to be saved.

"The watermen were immediately taken up by some of their own friends, who, far from yielding any assistance to the catchpoles, kept aloof, and exulted in their calamity. In short, two of the five went to the bottom, and never saw the light of God's sun; and the other three, with great difficulty, saved themselves by laying hold on the rudder of a dung-barge, to which they

they were carried by the ſtream, while Tom, with great deliberation, ſwam acroſs to the Surry ſhore. After this atchievement, he was ſo much dreaded by the whole fraternity, that they ſhivered at the very mention of his name; and this character, which ſome people would think an advantage to a man in debt, was the greateſt misfortune that could poſſibly happen to him: becauſe no tradeſman would give him credit for the leaſt trifle, on the ſuppoſition that he could not indemnify himſelf in the common courſe of law."

The parſon didnot approve of Mr. Hackabout's method of eſcaping, which he conſidered as a very unchriſtian attempt upon the lives of his fellow-ſubjects. "It is enough," ſaid he, "that we elude the laws of our country, without murdering the officers of juſtice: for my own part, I can lay my hand upon my heart, and ſafely ſay, that I forgive from my ſoul the fellow by whom I was made a priſoner; although the circumſtances of his behaviour were treacherous, wicked, and profane. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, I was one day called into my chapel, in order to join a couple in the holy bands of matrimony; and my affairs being at that time ſo ſituated, as to lay me under apprehenſions of an arreſt, I cautiouſly ſurveyed the man through a lattice which was made for that purpoſe, before I would venture to come within his reach. He was cloathed in a ſeaman's jacket and trowzers, and had ſuch an air of ſimplicity in his countenance, as diveſted me of all ſuſpicion: I therefore, without farther ſcruple, truſted myſelf in his preſence, began to exerciſe the duty of my function, and had actually performed one half of the ceremony, when the ſuppoſed woman, pulling out a paper from her boſom, exclaimed with a maſculine voice, "Sir, you are my priſoner, I have got a writ againſt you for five hundred pounds." I was thunderſtruck at this declaration, not ſo much on account of my own misfortune, which (thank Heaven!) I can bear with patience and reſignation, as at the impiety of the wretch; firſt, in diſguiſing ſuch a worldly aim under the cloak

of religion; and, secondly, in prostituting the service, when there was no occasion for so doing, his design having previously taken effect. Yet I forgive him, poor soul! because he knew not what he did; and I hope you, Sir Sipple, will exert the same Christian virtue towards the man by whom you was likewise overreached."

"Oh, damn the rascal!" cried the knight, "were I his judge, he should be condemned to flames everlasting. A villain! to disgrace me in such a manner, before almost all the fashionable company in town." Our hero expressing a curiosity to know the particulars of this adventure, the knight gratified his desire by telling him, that one evening, while he was engaged in a *partie* of cards at a drum in the house of a certain lady of quality, he was given to understand by one of the servants, that a stranger, very richly dressed, was just arrived in a chair, preceded by five footmen with flambeaus, and that he refused to come up stairs, until he should be introduced by Sir Sipple. "Upon this notice," continued the knight, "I judged it was some of my quality friends; and having obtained her ladyship's permission to bring him up, went down to the hall, and perceived a person, whom, to the best of my recollection, I had never seen before. However, his appearance was so magnificent that I could not harbour the least suspicion of his true quality; and seeing me advance, he saluted me with a very genteel bow, observing, that though he had not the honour of my acquaintance, he could not dispense with waiting upon me, even on that occasion, in consequence of a letter which he had received from a particular friend. So saying, he put a paper into my hand, intimating, that he had got a writ against me for ten thousand pounds, and that it would be my interest to submit without resistance, for he was provided with a guard of twenty men, who surrounded the door in different disguises, determined to secure me against all opposition. Enraged at the scoundrel's finesse, and trusting to the assistance of the real

footmen

footmen assembled in the hall, "So, you are a rascally bailiff," said I, "who have assumed the garb of a gentleman, in order to disturb her ladyship's company. Take this fellow, my lads, and roll him in the kennel: here are ten guineas for your trouble." These words were no sooner pronounced, than I was seized, lifted up, placed in a chair, and carried off in the twinkling of an eye: not but that the servants of the house, and some other footmen, made a motion towards my rescue, and alarmed all the company above; but the bailiff affirming with undaunted effrontery, that I was taken up upon an affair of state, and so many people appearing in his behalf, the countess would not suffer the supposed messenger to be insulted, and he carried me to the county-gaol without farther lett or molestation."

CHAP. XIII.

Pickle seems tolerably well reconciled to his Cage; and is by the Clergyman entertained with the Memoirs of a noted Personage, whom he sees by Accident in the Fleet.

THE knight had scarce finished his narrative, when our hero was told, that a gentleman in the coffee-room wanted to see him; and when he went thither, he found his friend Crabtree, who had transacted all his affairs according to the determination of the preceding day; and now gave him an account of the remarks he had overheard on the subject of his misfortune; for the manner of the arrest was so publick and extraordinary, that those who were present, immediately propagated it among their acquaintance, and it was that same evening discoursed upon at several tea and card-tables, with this variation from the truth, that the debt amounted to twelve thousand, instead of twelve hundred pounds: from which circumstance it was conjectured, that Peregrine was a bite from the beginning, who had found credit on account of his effrontery and appearance, and imposed himself upon the town as a young gentleman of fortune. They rejoiced, therefore, at his calamity, which

they confidered as a juft pnnifhment for his fraud and prefumption, and began to review certain particulars of his conduct, and plainly demonftrated him to be a rank adventurer, long before he had arrived at this end of his career.

Pickle, who now believed his glory was fet for ever, received this intelligence with that difdain which enables a man to detach himfelf effectually from the world, and, with great tranquillity, gave the mifanthrope an entertaining detail of what he had feen and heard fince their laft parting. While they amufed themfelves in this manner over a difh of coffee, they were joined by the parfon, who congratulated our hero upon his bearing mifchance with fuch philofophick quiet, and began to regale the two friends with fome curious circumftances relating to the private hiftory of the feveral prifoners, as they happened to come in.

At length a gentleman entered; at fight of whom the clergyman rofe up, and faluted him with a moft reverential bow, which was gracioufly returned by the ftranger; who, with a young man that attended him, retired to the other end of the room. They were no fooner out of hearing, than the communicative prieft defired his company to take particular notice of this perfon to whom he paid his refpects: "That man," faid he, "is this day one of the moft flagrant inftances of neglected virtue which the world can produce. Over and above a cool difcerning head, fraught with uncommon learning and experience, he is poffeffed of fuch fortitude and refolution, as no difficulties can difcourage, and no danger impair; and fo indefatigable in his humanity, that even now, while he is furrounded with fuch embarraffments as would diftract the brain of any ordinary mortal, he has added confiderably to his incumbrances, by taking under his protection that young gentleman; who, induced by his character, appealed to his benevolence for redrefs of the grievances under which he labours from the villainy of his guardian."

Peregrine's curiofity being excited by this encomium, he

he asked the name of this generous patron, of which when he was informed. "I am no stranger," said he, "to the fame of that gentleman, who has made a considerable noise in the world, on account of that great cause he undertook in defence of an unhapyy orphan; and since he is a person of such an amiable disposition, I am heartily sorry to find that his endeavours have not met with that successful issue which their good fortune in the beginning seemed to promise. Indeed, the circumstance of his espousing that cause was so uncommon and romantic, and the depravity of the human heart so universal, that some people, unacquainted with his real character, imagined his views were altogether selfish; and some were not wanting, who affirmed he was a mere adventurer. Nevertheless, I must do him the justice to own, I have heard some of the most virulent of those who were concerned on the other side of the question bear testimony in his favour; observing, that he was deceived into the expence of the whole, by the plausible story which at first engaged his compassion. Your description of his character confirms me in the same opinion, though I am quite ignorant of the affair; the particulars of which I should be glad to learn, as well as a genuine account of his own life, many circumstances of which are by his enemies, I believe, egregiously misrepresented."

"Sir," answered the priest, "that is a piece of satisfaction which I am glad to find myself capable of giving you: I have had the pleasure of being acquainted with Mr. M—— from his youth; and every thing which I shall relate concerning him, you may depend upon as fact which hath fallen under my own cognizance, or been vouched upon the credit of undoubted evidence.

"Mr. M——'s father was a minister of the established church of Scotland, descended from a very ancient clan, and his mother nearly related to a noble family in the northern part of that kingdom. While the son was boarded at a public school, where he made good progress

progreſs in the Latin tongue, his father died, and he was left an orphan to the care of an uncle, who finding him determined againſt any ſervile employment, kept him at ſchool, that he might prepare himſelf for the univerſity, with a view of being qualified for his father's profeſſion.

"Here his imagination was ſo heated by the warlike atchievements he found recorded in the Latin authors, ſuch as Cæſar, Curtius, and Buchanan, that he was ſeized with an irreſiſtible thirſt of military glory, and deſire of trying his fortune in the army. His majeſty's troops taking the field, in conſequence of the rebellion which happened in the year ſeventeen hundred and fifteen, this young adventurer, thinking no life equal to that of a ſoldier, found means to furniſh himſelf with a fuſil and bayonet, and leaving the ſchool, repaired to the camp near Stirling, with a view of ſignalizing himſelf in the field, though he was at that time but juſt turned of thirteen. He offered his ſervice to ſeveral officers, in hopes of being inliſted in their companies; but they would not receive him, becauſe they rightly concluded that he was ſome ſchool boy, broke looſe without the knowledge or conſent of his relations. Notwithſtanding this diſcouragement, he contiuued in camp, curiouſly prying into every part of the ſervice; and ſuch was the reſolution conſpicuous in him, even at ſuch a tender age, that after his ſmall finances were exhauſted, he perſiſted in his deſign; and becauſed he would not make his wants known, actually ſubſiſted for ſeveral days on hips, haws, and ſloes, and other ſpontaneous fruits which he gathered in the woods and fields. Meanwhile, he never failed to be preſent when any regiment or corps of men were drawn out to be exerciſed and reviewed, and accompanied them in all their evolutions, which he had learned to great perfection, by obſerving the companies which were quartered in the place where he was at ſchool. This eagerneſs and perſeverance attracted the notice of many officers; who, after having commended his ſpirit and zeal, preſſ-

ed him to return to his parents, and even threatened to expel him from the camp, if he would not comply with their advice.

"These remonstrances having no other effect than that of warning him to avoid his monitors, they thought proper to alter their behaviour towards him, took him into their protection, and even into their mess; and what, above all other marks of favour, pleased the young soldier most, permitted him to incorporate in the battalion, and take his turn of duty with the other men. In this happy situation he was discovered by a relation of his mother, who was a captain in the army, and who used all his authority and influence in persuading M— to return to school; but finding him deaf to his admonitions and threats, he took him under his own care; and when the army marched to Dumblane, left him at Stirling, with express injunction to keep himself within the walls.

"He temporised with his kinsman, fearing that should he seem refractory, the captain would have ordered him to be shut up in the castle. Inflamed with the desire of seeing a battle, his relation no sooner marched off the ground, than he mixed in with another regiment, to which his former patrons belonged, and proceeded to the field, where he distinguished himself, even at that early time of life, by his gallantry, in helping to retrieve a pair of colours belonging to M—n's regiment; so that after the affair he was presented to the Duke of Argyle, and recommended strongly to Brigadier Grant, who invited him into his regiment, and promised to provide for him with the first opportunity: but that gentleman in a little time lost his command upon the duke's disgrace, and the regiment was ordered for Ireland, being given to Colonel Nassau, whose favour the young volunteer acquired to such a degree, that he was recommended to the king for an ensigncy, which in all probability he would have obtained, had not the regiment been unluckily reduced.

"In consequence of this reduction, which happened in

in the moſt ſevere ſeaſon of the year, he was obliged to return to his own country, through infinite hardſhips, to which he was expoſed from the narrowneſs of his circumſtances: and continuing ſtill enamoured of a military life, he entered into the regiment of Scotch Greys, at that time commanded by the late Sir James Campbell, who being acquainted with his family and character, encouraged him with the promiſe of ſpeedy preferment. In this corps he remained three years, during which he had no opportunity of ſeeing actual ſervice, except at the affair of Glenſheel; and this life of inſipid quiet muſt have hung heavy upon a youth of M—'s active diſpoſition, had not he found exerciſe for the mind, in reading books of amuſement, hiſtory, voyages, and geography, together with thoſe that treated of the art of war, ancient and modern, for which he contracted ſuch an eager appetite, that he uſed to ſpend ſixteen hours a day in this employment. About that time he became acquainted with a gentleman of learning and taſte, who obſerving his indefatigable application, and inſatiable thirſt after knowledge, took upon himſelf the charge of ſuperintending his ſtudies; and by the direction of ſuch an able guide, the young ſoldier converted his attention to a more ſolid and profitable courſe of reading. So inordinate was his deſire of making ſpeedy advances in the paths of learning, that within the compaſs of three months, he diligently peruſed the writings of Locke and Malbranche, and made himſelf maſter of the firſt ſix, and of the eleventh and twelfth book of Euclid's Elements. He conſidered Pufendorf and Grotius with uncommon care, acquired a tolerable degree of knowledge in the French language, and his imagination was ſo captivated with the deſire of learning, that ſeeing no proſpect of a war, or views of being provided for in the ſervice, he quitted the army, and went through a regular courſe of univerſity education. Having made ſome progreſs in his ſtudies, he reſolved to qualify himſelf for the church; and acquired ſuch a ſtock of ſchool divinity under the inſtructions

of a learned professor at Edinburgh, that he more than once mounted the rostrum in the public hall, and held forth with uncommon applause: but being discouraged from a prosecution of his plan, by the unreasonable austerity of some of the Scotch clergy, by whom the most indifferent and innocent words and actions were often misconstrued into levity and misconduct, he resolved to embrace the first favourable opportunity of going abroad, being inflamed with the desire of seeing foreign countries, and actually set out for Holland, where for the space of two years he studied the Roman law, with the law of nature and nations, under the famous professors Tolieu and Barbeyrac.

"Having thus finished his school education, he set out for Paris, with a view to make himself perfect in the French language, and learn such usual exercises as might be acquired with the wretched remnant of his slender estate, which was by that time reduced very low. In his journey through the Netherlands, he went to Namur, and paid his respects to Bishop Strickland and General Collier, by whom he was received with great civility, in consequence of letters of recommendation, with which he was provided from the Hague, and the old general assured him of his protection and interest for a pair of colours, if he was disposed to enter into the Dutch service.

"Though he was by that time pretty well cured of his military Quixotism, he would not totally decline the generous proffer, for which he thanked him in the most grateful terms, telling the general that he would pay his duty to him on his return from France, and then, if he could determine upon re-engaging in the army, should think himself highly honoured in being under his command.

"After a stay of two months in Flanders, he proceeded to Paris; and, far from taking up his habitation in the suburbs of St. Germain, according to the custom of English travellers, he hired a private lodging on the other side of the river, and associated chiefly with French

French officers, who (their youthful fallies being over) are allowed to be the politeft gentlemen of that kingdom. In this fcheme he found his account fo much, that he could not but wonder at the folly of his countrymen, who lofe the main fcope of their going abroad, by fpending their time and fortune idly with one another.

"During his refidence in Holland he had made himfelf acquainted with the beft authors in the French language, fo that he was able to fhare in their converfation; a circumftance from which he found great benefit; for it not only improved him in his knowledge of that tongue, but alfo tended to the enlargement of his acquaintance, in the courfe of which he contracted intimacies in fome families of good fafhion, efpecially thofe of the long robe, which would have enabled him to pafs his time very agreeably, had he been a little eafier in point of fortune: but his finances, notwithftanding the moft rigid œconomy, being in a few months reduced to a very low ebb, the profpect of indigence threw a damp upon all his pleafures, though he never fuffered himfelf to be thereby in any degree difpirited; being in that refpect of fo happy a difpofition, that confcious poverty or abundance made very flight impreffions upon his mind.

"This confumption of his cafh, however, involved him in fome perplexity; and he deliberated with himfelf, whether he fhould return to General Collier, or repair to London, where he might poffibly fall into fome bufinefs not unbecoming a gentleman; though he was very much mortified to find himfelf incapable of gratifying an inordinate defire which poffeffed him of making the grand tour, or at leaft of vifiting the fouthern parts of France.

"While he thus hefitated between different fuggeftions, he was one morning vifited by a gentleman who had fought and cultivated his friendfhip, and for whom he had done a good office, in fupporting him with fpirit againft a brutal German, with whom he had an affair of honour. This gentleman came to propofe a

party for a fortnight to Fontainbleau, where the court then was; and the propofal being declined by M— with more than ufual ftiffnefs, his friend was very urgent to know the reafon of his refufal, and at length, with fome confufion, faid, "Perhaps your finances are low." M— replied, that he had wherewithal to defray the expence of his journey to London, where he could be furnifhed with a frefh fupply; and this anfwer was no fooner made, than the other taking him by the hand, "My dear friend," faid he, "I am not unacquainted with your affairs, and would have offered you my credit long ago, if I had thought it would be acceptable; even now, I do not pretend to give you money, but defire and infift upon it, that you will accept of the loan of thefe two pieces of paper, to be repaid when you marry a woman with a fortune of twenty thoufand pounds, or obtain an employment of a thoufand a year." So faying, he prefented him with two actions of above two thoufand livres each.

"M— was aftonifhed at this unexpected inftance of generofity in a ftranger, and with fuitable acknowledgment peremptorily refufed to incur fuch an obligation; but at length he was, by dint of importunity, and warm expoftulation, prevailed upon to accept one of the actions, on condition that the gentleman would take his note for the fum; and this he abfolutely rejected, until M— promifed to draw upon him for double the value or more, in cafe he fhould at any time want a farther fupply. This uncommon act of friendfhip and generofity M— afterwards had an opportunity to repay ten fold; though he could not help regretting the occafion on his friend's account. That worthy man having, by placing too much confidence in a villainous lawyer, and a chain of other misfortunes, involved himfelf and his amiable lady in a labyrinth of difficulties, which threatened the total ruin of his family; M— felt the inexpreffible fatisfaction of delivering his benefactor from the fnare.

"Being thus reinforced by the generofity of his friend,

friend, M— resolved to execute his former plan of seeing the south of France, together with the sea-ports of Spain as far as Cadiz, from whence he proposed to take a passage for London by sea; and with this view, sent forwards his trunks by the diligence to Lyons, determined to ride post, in order to enjoy a better view of the country, and for the conveniency of stopping at those places where there was any thing remarkable to be seen or enquired into. While he was employed in taking leave of his Parisian friends, who furnished him with abundant recommendation, a gentleman of his own country, who spoke little or no French, hearing of his intention, begged the favour of accompanying him in his expedition.

"With this new companion, therefore, he set out for Lyons, where he was perfectly well received by the intendant and some of the best families of the place, in consequence of his letters of recommendation; and after a short stay in that city, proceeded down the Rhone to Avignon, in what is called the *coche d'eau*; then visiting the principal towns of Dauphiné, Languedoc, and Provence, he returned to the delightful city of Marseilles, where he and his fellow-traveller were so much captivated by the serenity of the air, and the good-nature and hospitality of the sprightly inhabitants, that they never dreamed of changing their quarters during the whole winter and part of the spring; here he acquired the acquaintance of the Marquis D'Argens, attorney-general in the Parliament of Aix, and of his eldest son, who now makes so great a figure in the literary world; and when the affair of Father Girad and Madamoiselle Cadiere began to make a noise, he accompanied these two gentlemen to Toulon, where the marquis was ordered to take precognition of the facts.

"On his return to Marseilles, he found a certain noble lord of great fortune under the direction of a Swiss governor, who had accommodated him with two of his own relations, of the same country, by way of companions, together with five servants in his train. They

being abſolute ſtrangers in the place, M— introduced them to the intendant, and ſeveral other good families; and had the good fortune to be ſo agreeable to his lordſhip, that he propoſed and even preſſed him to live with him in England, as a friend and companion, and to take upon him the ſuperintendance of his affairs, in which caſe he would ſettle upon him four hundred a year for life.

"This propoſal was too advantageous to be ſlighted by a perſon of no fortune or fixed eſtabliſhment; he therefore made no difficulty of cloſing with it: but as his lordſhip's departure was fixed to a ſhort day, and he urged him to accompany him to Paris, and from thence to England, M— thought it would be improper and indecent to interfere with the office of his governor, who might take umbrage at his favour, and therefore excuſed himſelf from a compliance with his lordſhip's requeſt, until his minority ſhould be expired, as he was within a few months of being of age. However, he repeated his importunities ſo earneſtly, and the governor joined in the requeſt with ſuch appearance of cordiality, that he was prevailed upon to comply with their joint deſire; and in a few days ſet out with them for Paris, by the way of Lyons. But before they had been three days in the city, M— perceived a total change in the behaviour of the Swiſs and his two relations, who, in all probability, became jealous of his influence with his lordſhip; and he no ſooner made this diſcovery, than he reſolved to withdraw himſelf from ſuch a diſagreeable participation of that young nobleman's favour. He therefore, in ſpite of all his lordſhip's entreaties and remonſtrances, quitted him for the preſent; alledging, as a pretext, that he had a longing deſire to ſee Switzerland and the banks of the Rhine, and promiſing to meet him again in England.

"This his intention being made known to the governor and his friends, their countenances immediately cleared up, their courteſy and complaiſance returned, and they even furniſhed him with letters for Geneva,

Lauſanne,

Lausanne, Bern, and Soleures; in consequence of which he met with unusual civilities at these places. Having made this tour with his Scotch friend (who came up to him before he left Lyons), and visited the most considerable towns on both sides of the Rhine, and the courts of the Electors Palatine, Mentz, and Cologn, he arrived in Holland; and from thence through the Netherlands repaired to London, where he found my lord just returned from Paris.

"His lordship received him with expressions of uncommon joy, would not suffer him to stir from him for several days, and introduced him to his relations.

"M— accompanied his lordship from London to his country-seat, where he was indeed treated with great friendship and confidence, and consulted in every thing; but the noble peer never once made mention of the annuity which he had promised to settle upon him; nor did M— remind him of it, because he conceived it was his affair to fulfil his engagements of his own accord. M— being tired of the manner of living at this place, made an excursion to Bath, where he staid about a fortnight, to partake of the diversions; and, upon his return, found his lordship making dispositions for another journey to Paris.

"Surprized at this sudden resolution, he endeavoured to dissuade him from it: but his remonstrances were rendered ineffectual by the insinuations of a foreigner who had come over with him, and filled his imagination with extravagant notions of pleasure, infinitely superior to any which he could enjoy while he was in the trammels, and under the restraints of a governor. He therefore turned a deaf ear to all M—'s arguments, and intreated him to accompany him in the journey; but this gentleman foreseeing that a young man like my lord, of strong passions and easy to be misled, would in all probability squander away great sums of money, in a way that would neither do credit to himself or to those who were concerned with him, resisted all his solicitations, on pretence of having business of consequence at London:

and

and afterwards had reaſon to be extremely well pleaſed with his own conduct in this particular.

"Before he ſet out on this expedition, M—, in juſtice to himſelf, reminded him of the propoſal which he had made to him at Marſeilles, deſiring to know if he had altered his deſign in that particular; in which caſe he would turn his thoughts ſome other way, as he would not in the leaſt be thought to intrude or pin himſelf upon any man. My lord proteſted, in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he ſtill continued in his former reſolution; and again beſeeching him to bear him company into France, promiſed that every thing ſhould be ſettled to his ſatisfaction upon their return to England. M—, however, ſtill perſiſted in his refuſal, for the abovementioned reaſons: and though he never heard more of the annuity, he nevertheleſs continued to ſerve his lordſhip with his advice and good offices ever after: particularly in directing his choice to an alliance with a lady of eminent virtue, the daughter of a noble lord, more conſpicuous for his ſhining parts than the ſplendor of his titles, (a circumſtance upon which he always reflected with particular ſatisfaction, as well on account of the extraordinary merit of the lady, as becauſe it veſted in her children a conſiderable part of that eſtate, which, of right belonged to her grandmother;) and afterwards put him in a way to retrieve his eſtate from a heavy load of debt he had contracted. When my lord ſet out on his Paris expedition, the money M— had received from his generous friend at Paris was almoſt reduced to the laſt guinea. He had not yet reaped the leaſt benefit from his engagements with his lordſhip; and diſdaining to aſk for a ſupply from him, he knew not how to ſubſiſt, with any degree of credit, till his return.

"This uncomfortable proſpect was the more diſagreeable to him, as, at that time of life, he was much inclined to appear in the gay world, had contracted a taſte for plays, operas, and other public diverſions, and had acquired an acquaintance with many people of good faſhion,

faſhion, which could not be maintained without a conſiderable expence. In this emergency, he thought he could not employ his idle time more profitably than in tranſlating from foreign languages ſuch books as were then chiefly in vogue; and upon application to a friend, who was a man of letters, he was furniſhed with as much buſineſs of that kind as he could poſſibly manage, and wrote ſome pamphlets on the reigning controverſies of that time that had the good fortune to pleaſe. He was alſo concerned in a monthly journal of literature, and the work was carried on by the two friends jointly, though M— did not at all appear in the partnerſhip. By theſe means he not only ſpent his mornings in uſeful exerciſe, but ſupplied himſelf with money for what the French call the *menus plaiſirs* during the whole ſummer. He frequented all the aſſemblies in and about London, and conſiderably enlarged his acquaintance among the fair-ſex.

"He had, upon his firſt arrival in England, become acquainted with a lady at an aſſembly not far from London; and though, at that time, he had no thoughts of extending his views farther than the uſual gallantry of the place, he met with ſuch diſtinguiſhing marks of her regard in the ſequel, and was ſo particularly encouraged by the advice of another lady, with whom he had been intimate in France, and who was now of their parties, that he could not help entertaining hopes of making an impreſſion upon the heart of his agreeable partner, who was a young lady of an ample fortune and great expectations. He, therefore, cultivated her good graces with all the aſſiduity and addreſs of which he was maſter; and ſucceeded ſo well in his endeavours, that, after a due courſe of attendance, and the death of an aunt, by which ſhe received an acceſſion of fortune to the amount of three-and-twenty thouſand pounds, he ventured to declare his paſſion; and ſhe not only heard him with patience and approbation, but alſo replied in terms adequate to his warmeſt wiſhes.

"Finding himſelf ſo favourably received, he preſſed her

her to ſecure his happineſs by marriage; but, to this propoſal, ſhe objected the recency of her kinſwoman's death, which would have rendered ſuch a ſtep highly indecent, and the diſpleaſure of her other relations, from whom ſhe had ſtill greater expectations, and who at that time importuned her to marry a couſin of her own, whom ſhe could not like. However, that M— might have have no cauſe to repine at her delay, ſhe freely entered with him into an intimacy of correſpondence; during which, nothing could have added to their mutual felicity, which was the more poignant and refined, from the myſterious and romantic manner of their enjoying it; for though he publicly viſited her as an acquaintance, his behaviour on theſe occaſions was always ſo diſtant, reſpectful, and reſerved, that the reſt of the company could not poſſibly ſuſpect the nature of their reciprocal attachment; in conſequence of which, they uſed to have private interviews, unknown to every ſoul upon earth except her maid, who was neceſſarily intruſted with the ſecret.

"In this manner they enjoyed the converſation of each other for above twelve months, without the leaſt interruption; and though the ſtability of Mr. M—'s fortune entirely depended upon their marriage, yet as he perceived his miſtreſs ſo averſe to it, he never urged it with vehemence, nor was at all anxious on that ſcore; being eaſily induced to defer a ceremony, which, as he then thought, could in no ſhape have added to their ſatisfaction, though he hath ſince altered his ſentiments.

"Be that as it will, his indulgent miſtreſs, in order to ſet his mind at eaſe in that particular, and in full confidence of his honour, inſiſted on his accepting a deed of gift of her whole fortune, in conſideration of their intended marriage; and, after ſome difficulty, he was prevailed upon to receive this proof of her eſteem, well knowing that it would ſtill be in his power to return the obligation. Though ſhe often intreated him to take upon himſelf the entire adminiſtration of her finances, and upon divers occaſions preſſed him to accept

cept of large sums, he never once abused her generous disposition, or solicited her for money, except for some humane purpose, which she was always more ready to fulfil than he to propose.

"In the course of this correspondence, he became acquainted with some of her female relations; and, among the rest, with a young lady, so eminently adorned with all the qualifications of mind and person, that, notwithstanding all his philosophy and caution, he could not behold and converse with her without being deeply smitten with her charms. He did all in his power to discourage this dangerous invasion in the beginning, and to conceal the least sympton of it from her relation; he summoned all his reflection to his aid; and thinking it would be base and dishonest to cherish any sentiment repugnant to the affection which he owed to a mistress, who had placed such unlimited confidence in him, he attempted to stifle the infant flame, by avoiding the amiable inspirer of it. But the passion had taken too deep a root in his heart to be so easily extirpated; his absence from the dear object increased the impatience of his love. The intestine conflict between that and gratitude, deprived him of his rest and appetite. He was in a short time emaciated by continual watching, anxiety, and want of nourishment; and so much altered from his usual chearfulness, that his mistress being surprized and alarmed at the change, which from the symptoms she judged was owing to some uneasiness of mind, took all imaginable pains to discover the cause.

"In all probability, it did not escape her penetration; for she more than once asked if he was in love with her cousin, protesting, that far from being an obstacle to his happiness, she would in that case be an advocate for his passion. However, this declaration was never made without manifest signs of anxiety and uneasiness, which made such an impression upon the heart of M—, that he resolved to sacrifice his happiness, and even his life, rather than take any step which might be construed into an injury or insult to a person who had treated him with such generosity and goodness.

"In conſequence of this reſolution, he formed another, which was to go abroad, under pretence of recovering his health, but in reality to avoid the temptation, as well as the ſuſpicion, of being inconſtant; and in this deſign he was confirmed by his phyſician, who actually thought him in the firſt ſtage of a conſumption, and therefore adviſed him to repair to the ſouth of France. He communicated his deſign, with the doctor's opinion, to the lady, who agreed to it with much leſs difficulty than he found in conquering his own reluctance at parting with the dear object of his love. The conſent of his generous miſtreſs being obtained, he waited upon her with the inſtrument whereby ſhe had made the conveyance of her fortune to him; and all his remonſtrances being inſufficient to perſuade her to take it back, he cancelled it in her preſence, and placed it in that ſtate upon her toilet while ſhe was dreſſing; whereupon ſhe ſhed a torrent of tears, ſaying, ſhe now plainly perceived that he wanted to tear himſelf from her, and that his affections were ſettled upon another. He was ſenſibly affected by this proof of her concern, and endeavoured to calm the perturbation of her mind by vowing eternal fidelity, and preſſing her to accept of his hand in due form before his departure. By these means her tranſports were quieted for the preſent, and the marriage deferred, for the ſame prudential reaſons which had hitherto prevented it.

"Matters being thus compromiſed, and the day fixed for his departure, ſhe, together with her faithful maid, one morning viſited him for the firſt time at his own lodgings; and after breakfaſt, deſiring to ſpeak with him in private, he conducted her into another room, where aſſuming an unuſual gravity of aſpect: "My dear M—," ſaid ſhe, "you are now going to leave me, and God alone knows if ever we ſhall meet again; therefore, if you really love me with that tenderneſs which you profeſs, you will accept of this mark of my friendſhip and unalterable affection: it will at leaſt be a proviſion for your journey; and if any acci-

dent

dent should befal me before I have the happiness of receiving you again into my arms, I shall have the satisfaction of knowing that you are not altogether without resource." So saying, she put an embroidered pocket-book into his hand. He expressed the high sense he had of her generosity and affection in the most pathetic terms, and begged leave to suspend his acceptance, until he should know the contents of her present, which was so extraordinary, that he absolutely refused to receive it: he was, however, by her repeated intreaties, in a manner compelled to receive about one half, and she afterwards insisted upon his taking a reinforcement of a considerable sum for the expence of his journey.

"Having staid with her ten days beyond the time he had fixed for his departure, and settled the method of their correspondence, he took his leave with a heart full of sorrow, anxiety, and distraction, produced from the different suggestions of his duty and love. He then set out for France, and after a short stay at Paris proceeded to Aix in Provence, and from thence to Marseilles, at which two places he continued for some months; but nothing he met with being able to dissipate those melancholy ideas which still preyed upon his imagination, and affected his spirits, he endeavoured to elude them with a succession of new objects; and with that view, persuaded a counsellor of the parliament of Aix, a man of great worth, learning, and good-humour, to accompany him in making a tour of those parts of France which he had not yet seen. On their return from this excursion, they found at Aix an Italian Abbe, a person of character, and great knowledge of men and books; who having travelled all over Germany and France, was so far on his return to his own country.

"M— having, by means of his friend the counsellor, contracted an acquaintance with this gentleman, and being desirous of seeing some parts of Italy, particularly the carnival at Venice, they set out together from Marseilles, in a tartan, for Genoa, coasting it all the way, and lying on shore every night. Having

 shewn

ſhewn him what was moſt remarkable in this city, hi
friend the Abbe was ſo obliging, as to conduct hi
through Tuſcany, and the moſt remarkable cities i
Lombardy, to Venice, where M— inſiſted upon defra
ing the expence of the whole tour, in conſideration o
the Abbe's complaiſance, which had been of infini
ſervice to him, in the courſe of this expedition. Ha
ing remained five weeks at Venice, he was preparing t
ſet out for Rome with ſome Engliſh gentlemen who
he had met by accident, when he was all of a ſudd
obliged to change his reſolution by ſome diſagreeab
letters which he received from London. He had, fro
his firſt departure, correſponded with his generou
though inconſtant miſtreſs, with a religious exactne
and punctuality; nor was ſhe, for ſome time, leſs ob
ſervant of the agreement they had made. Neverth
leſs ſhe, by degrees, became ſo negligent and cold i
her expreſſion, and ſo ſlack in her correſpondence, th
he could not help obſerving and upbraiding her wi
ſuch indifference; and her endeavours to palliate
were ſupported by pretexts ſo frivolous, as to be eaſil
ſeen through by a lover of very little diſcernment.

"While he tortured himſelf with conjectures abo
the cauſe of this unexpected change, he received ſuc
intelligence from England, as when joined with wh
he himſelf had perceived, by her manner of writing, le
him little or no room to doubt of her fickleneſs and in
conſtancy. Nevertheleſs, as he knew by experienc
that informations of that kind are not to be entire
relied upon, he reſolved to be more certainly apprized
and for that end, departed immediately for London, b
the way of Tirol, Bavaria, Alſace, and Paris.

"On his arrival in England, he learned with infini
concern, that his intelligence had not been at all exa
gerated; and his ſorrow was inexpreſſible, to find
perſon, endowed with ſo many other noble and amiab
qualities, ſeduced into an indiſcretion, that of neceſſi
ruined the whole plan which had been concerted b
tween them for their mutual happineſs. She made
ver

veral attempts, by letters and interviews, to palliate her conduct, and soften him into a reconciliation; but his honour being concerned, he remained deaf to all her intreaties and proposals. Nevertheless, I have often heard him say that he could not help loving her, and revering the memory of a person to whose generosity and goodness he owed his fortune, and one whose foibles were overbalanced by a thousand good qualities. He often insisted on making restitution, but far from complying with that proposal, she afterwards often endeavoured to lay him under yet greater obligations of the same kind, and importuned him, with the warmest solicitations, to renew their former correspondence, which he as often declined.

"M— took this instance of the inconstancy of the sex so much to heart, that he had almost resolved, for the future, to keep clear of all engagements for life, and returned to Paris in order to dissipate his anxiety, where he hired an apartment in one of the academies, in the exercises whereof he took singular delight. During his residence at this place, he had the good fortune to ingratiate himself with a great general, a descendant of one of the most ancient and illustrious families in France; having attracted his notice by some remarks he had written on Folard's Polybius, which were accidentally shewn to that great man by one of his aids de camp, who was a particular friend of M—. The favour he had thus acquired, was strengthened by his assiduities and attention. Upon his return to London, he sent some of Handel's newest compositions to the prince, who was particularly fond of that gentleman's productions; together with Clark's edition of Cæsar; and in the spring of the same year, before the French army took the field, he was honoured with a most obliging letter from the prince, inviting him to come over, if he wanted to see the operations of the campaign, and desiring he would give himself no trouble about his equipage.

"M— having still some remains of a military dispo-

ſition, and conceiving this to be a more favourable opportunity than any he ſhould ever meet with again, readily embraced the offer, and ſacrificed the ſoft delights of love, which at that time he enjoyed without controul, to an eager, laborious, and dangerous curioſity. In that and the following campaign, during which he was preſent at the ſiege of Philipſburg, and ſeveral other actions, he enlarged his acquaintance among the French officers, eſpecially thoſe of the graver ſort, who had a taſte for books and literature; and the friendſhip and intereſt of thoſe gentlemen were afterwards of ſingular ſervice to him, though in an affair altogether foreign from their profeſſion.

"He had all along made diligent enquiry into the trade and manufactures of the countries through which he had occaſion to travel, more particularly thoſe of Holland, England, and France; and as he was well acquainted with the revenue and farms of this laſt kingdom, he ſaw with concern the great diſadvantages under which our tobacco trade (the moſt conſiderable branch of our commerce with that people) was carried on; what inconſiderable returns were made to the planters, out of the low price given by the French company; and how much it was in the power of that company to reduce it ſtill lower. M—— had formed a ſcheme to remedy this evil, ſo far as it related to the national loſs or gain, by not permitting the duty of one penny in the pound, old ſubſidy, to be drawn back on tobacco re-exported. He demonſtrated to the miniſtry of that time, that ſo inconſiderable a duty could not in the leaſt diminiſh the demand from abroad, which was the only circumſtance to be apprehended, and that the yearly produce of that revenue would amount to one hundred and twenty thouſand pounds, without one ſhilling additional expence to the publick; but the miniſtry having the exciſe ſcheme then in contemplation, could think of no other till that ſhould be tried; and that project having miſcarried, he renewed his application, when they approved of his ſcheme in

every particular, but discovered a surprizing backwardness to carry it into execution.

"His expectations in this quarter being disappointed, he, by the interposition of his friends, presented a plan to the French company, in which he set forth the advantages that would accrue to themselves from fixing the price, and securing that sort of tobacco which best suited the taste of the publick and their manufacture: and finally proposed to furnish them with any quantity, at the price which they paid in the port of London.

"After some dispute, they agreed to his proposal, and contracted with him for fifteen thousand hogsheads a year, for which they obliged themselves to pay ready money, on its arrival in any one or more convenient ports in the south or western coasts of Great Britain that he should please to fix upon for that purpose. M—— no sooner obtained this contract, than he immediately set out for America, in order to put it in execution; and, by way of companion, carried with him a little French abbé, a man of humour, wit, and learning, with whom he had been long acquainted, and for whom he had done many good offices.

"On his arrival at Virginia, which opportunely happened at a time when all the gentlemen were assembled in the capital of that province, he published a memorial, representing the disadvantages under which their trade was carried on; the true method of redressing their own grievances in that respect; and proposing to contract with them for the yearly quantity of fifteen thousand hogsheads of such tobacco as was fit for the French market, at the price which he demonstrated to be considerably greater than that which they had formerly received.

"This remonstrance met with all the success and encouragement he could expect: the principal planters, seeing their own interest concerned, readily assented to the proposal, which, through their influence, was also relished by the rest; and the only difficulty that re-

mained related to the ſecurity for payment of the bills on the arrival of the tobacco in England, and to the time ſtipulated for the continuance of the contract.

"In order to remove theſe objections, Mr. M—— returned to Europe, and found the French company of farmers diſpoſed to agree to every thing he deſired for facilitating the execution of the contract, and perfectly well pleaſed with the ſample which he had already ſent; but his good friend the abbé, (whom he had left behind him in America) by an unparalleled piece of treachery, found means to overturn the whole project. He ſecretly wrote a memorial to the company, importing, that he found by experience M—— could afford to furniſh them at a much lower price than that which they had agreed to give; and that, by being in poſſeſſion of the contract for five years, as was intended according to the propoſal, he would have the company ſo much in his power, that they muſt afterwards ſubmit to any price he ſhould pleaſe to impoſe; and that if they thought him worthy of ſuch a truſt, he would undertake to furniſh them at an eaſier rate, in conjunction with ſome of the leading men in Virginia and Maryland, with whom he ſaid he had already concerted meaſures for that purpoſe.

"The company were ſo much alarmed at theſe inſinuations, that they declined complying with Mr. Mr. M——'s demands until the abbé's return; and though they afterwards uſed all their endeavours to perſuade him to be concerned with that little traitor in his undertaking (by which he might ſtill have been a very conſiderable gainer) he reſiſted all their ſolicitations, and plainly told them in the abbé's preſence, that he would never proſtitute his own principles ſo far, as to enter into engagements of any kind with a perſon of his character, much leſs in a ſcheme that had a manifeſt tendency to lower the market price of tobacco in England.

"Thus ended a project the moſt extenſive, ſimple, and eaſy, and (as appeared by the trial made) the beſt

calculated

calculated to raiſe an immenſe fortune, of any that was ever undertaken or planned by a private perſon; a project, in the execution of which M—— had the good of the publick, and the glory of putting in a flouriſhing condition that valuable branch of our trade, (which gives employment to two great provinces, and above two hundred ſail of ſhips) much more at heart than his own private intereſt. It was reaſonable to expect, that a man whoſe debts M—— had paid more than once, whom he had obliged in many other reſpects, and whom he had carried with him at a very conſiderable expence on this expedition, merely with a view of bettering his fortune, would have acted with common honeſty, if not with gratitude; but ſuch was the depravity of this little monſter's heart, that on his death-bed he left a conſiderable fortune to mere ſtrangers, with whom he had little or no connection, without the leaſt thought of refunding the money advanced for him by M——, in order to prevent his rotting in a gaol.

"When M—— had once obtained a command of money, he, by his knowledge in ſeveral branches of trade, as well as by the aſſiſtance of ſome intelligent friends at Paris and London, found means to employ it to very good purpoſe; and had he been a man of that ſelfiſh diſpoſition, which too much prevails in the world, he might have been at this day maſter of a very ample fortune: but his ear was never deaf to the voice of diſtreſs, nor his beneficent heart ſhut againſt the calamities of his fellow-creatures. He was even ingenious in contriving the moſt delicate methods of relieving modeſt indigence, and, by his induſtrious benevolence, often anticipated the requeſts of miſery.

"I could relate a number of examples to illuſtrate my aſſertions, in ſome of which you would perceive the moſt diſintereſted generoſity; but ſuch a detail would treſpaſs too much upon your time, and I do not pretend to dwell upon every minute circumſtance of his conduct. Let it ſuffice to ſay, that upon the declaration of war with Spain, he gave up all his commercial ſchemes,

ſchemes, and called in his money from all quarters, with a view of ſitting down for the reſt of his life contented with what he had got, and reſtraining his liberalities to what he could ſpare from his yearly income. This was a very prudential reſolution, could he have kept it; but, upon the breaking out of the war, he could not without concern ſee many gentlemen of merit, who had been recommended to him, diſappointed of commiſſions, merely for want of money to ſatisfy the expectations of the commiſſion-brokers of that time; and therefore launched out conſiderable ſums for them on their bare notes, great part whereof was loſt by the death of ſome in the unfortunate expedition to the Weſt Indies.

" He at length, after many other actions of the like nature, from motives of pure humanity, love of juſtice, and abhorrence of oppreſſion, embarked in a cauſe, every way the moſt important that ever came under the diſcuſſion of the courts of law in theſe kingdoms; whether it be conſidered in relation to the extraordinary nature of the caſe, or the immenſe property of no leſs than fifty thouſand pounds a year, and three peerages, that depended upon it.

" In the year 1740, the brave admiral who at that time commanded his majeſty's fleet in the Weſt Indies, among the other tranſactions of his ſquadron tranſmitted to the Duke of Newcaſtle, mentioned a young man, who though in the capacity of a common ſailor on board one of the ſhips under his command, laid claim to the eſtate and titles of the Earl of A——. Theſe pretenſions were no ſooner communicated in the publick papers, than they became the ſubject of converſation in all companies; and the perſon whom they chiefly affected, being alarmed at the appearance of a competitor, though at ſuch diſtance, began to put himſelf in motion, and take all the precautions which he thought neceſſary to defeat the endeavour of the young upſtart. Indeed the early intelligence he received of Mr. A—y's making himſelf known in the Weſt Indies, furniſhed him

him with numberleſs advantages over that unhappy young gentleman: for being in poſſeſſion of a plentiful fortune, and lord of many manors in the neighbourhood of the very place where the claimant was born, he knew all the witneſſes who could give the moſt material evidence of his legitimacy; and, if his probity did not reſtrain him, had, by his power and influence, ſufficient opportunity and means of applying to the paſſions and intereſts of the witneſſes, to ſilence many, and gain over others to his ſide; which his competitor, by an abſence of fifteen or ſixteen years from his native country, the want of education and friends, together with his preſent helpleſs ſituation, was rendered abſolutely incapable of taking any ſtep for his own advantage. And although his worthy uncle's conſpicuous virtue and religious regard for juſtice and truth might poſſibly be an unconquerable reſtraint to his taking any undue advantages, yet the conſciences of that huge army of emiſſaries he kept in pay, were not altogether ſo very tender and ſcrupulous. This much, however, may be ſaid, without derogation from or impeachment of the noble earl's nice virtue and honour, that he took care to compromiſe all differences with the other branches of the family, whoſe intereſts were, in this affair, connected with his own, by ſharing the eſtate with them, and alſo retained moſt of the eminent council within the bar of both kingdoms againſt this formidable baſtard, before any ſuit was inſtituted by him.

While he was thus entrenching himſelf againſt the attack of a poor forlorn youth, at the diſtance of fifteen hundred leagues, continually expoſed to the dangers of the ſea, the war, and an unhealthy climate, Mr. M—, in the common courſe of converſation, chanced to aſk ſome queſtions relating to this romantick pretender of one H——, who was at that time the preſent Lord A——y's chief agent. This man, when preſſed, could not help owning the late Lord A——m actually left a ſon, who had been ſpirited away into America, ſoon af-

ter his father's death, but said he did not know whether this was the same person.

"This information could not fail to make an impression on the humanity of Mr. M——, who being acquainted with the genius of the wicked party who had possessed themselves of this unhappy young man's estate and honours, expressed no small anxiety and apprehension lest they should take him off by some means or other; and, even then, seemed dispos[ed] to contribute towards the support of the friendless orphan, and to enquire more circumstantially into the nature of his claim. In the mean time, his occasions called him to France; and during his absence, Mr. A——y arrived in London in the month of October 1741."

Here the clergyman was interrupted by Peregrine, who said there was something so extraordinary, not to call it improbable, in the account he had heard of the young gentleman's being sent into exile, that he would look upon himself as infinitely obliged to the doctor, if he would favour him with a true representation of that transaction, as well as of the manner in which he arrived and was known at the island of Jamaica.

The parson, in compliance with our hero's request, taking up the story from the beginning, "Mr A——y," said he, "is son of Arthur late Lord Baron of A——m, by his wife Mary Sh—d, natural daughter to John Duke of B—— and N——by, whom he publicly married on the 21st day of July 1706, contrary to the inclination of his mother and all his other relations, particularly of Arthur late Earl of A——y, who bore an implacable enmity to the duke her father, and for that reason did all that lay in his power to traverse the marriage: but finding his endeavours ineffectual, he was so much offended, that he would never be perfectly reconciled to Lord A——m, though he was his presumptive heir. After their nuptials, they cohabited together in England for the space of two or three years; during which she miscarried more than once; and he being a man of levity, and an extravagant disposition,

not only squandered away all that he had received of his wife's fortune, but also contracted many considerable debts, which obliged him to make a precipitate retreat into Ireland, leaving his lady behind him in the house with his mother and sister; who, having also been averse to the match, had always looked upon her with eyes of disgust.

"It was not likely that harmony should long subsist in this family, especially as Lady A——m was a woman of a lofty spirit, who could not tamely bear insults and ill-usage, from persons who, she had reason to believe, were her enemies at heart. Accordingly a misunderstanding soon happened among them, which was fomented by the malice of one of her sisters-in-law: divers scandalous reports of her misconduct, to which the empty pretensions of a vain, wretched coxcomb, (who was made use of as an infamous tool for that purpose) gave a colourable pretext, were trumped up, and transmitted, with many false and aggravating circumstances, to her husband in Ireland, who being a giddy, unthinking man, was so much incensed at these insinuations, that, in the first transports of his passion, he sent to his mother a power of attorney, that she might sue for a divorce in his behalf. A libel was thereupon exhibited, containing many scandalous allegations, void of any real foundation in truth; but being unsupported by any manner of proof, it was at length dismissed with costs, after it had depended upwards of two years.

"Lord A——m finding himself abused by the misrepresentations of his mother and sister, discovered an inclination to be reconciled to his lady: in consequence of which, she was sent over to Dublin by her father, to the care of a gentleman in that city; in whose house she was received by her husband, with all the demonstrations of love and esteem. From thence he conducted her to his lodgings, and then to his country house, where she had the misfortune to suffer a miscarriage, through fear and resentment of my lord's behaviour, which was often brutal and indecent. From the country they

they removed to Dublin about the latter end of July, or beginning of Auguſt 1714, where they had not long continued, when her ladyſhip was known to be again with child.

" Lord A——m and his iſſue being next in remainder to the honours and eſtate of Arthur Earl of A——a, was extremely ſolicitous to have a ſon; and, warned by the frequent miſcarriages of his lady, reſolved to curb the natural impatience and ruſticity of his diſpoſition, that ſhe might not, as formerly, ſuffer by his outrageous conduct. He accordingly cheriſhed her with uncommon tenderneſs and care; and her pregnancy being pretty far advanced, conducted her to his country-ſeat, where ſhe was delivered of Mr. A——y, about the latter end of April or beginning of May; for none of the witneſſes have been able, at this diſtance, with abſolute certainty to fix the preciſe time of his birth, and there was no regiſter kept in the pariſh: as an additional misfortune, no gentleman of faſhion lived in that pariſh; nor did thoſe who lived at any conſiderable diſtance care to cultivate an acquaintance with a man of Lord A——m's ſtrange conduct.

" Be that as it will, the occaſion was celebrated by his lordſhip's tenants and dependants upon the ſpot, and in the neighbouring town of New R—ſs, by bonfires, illuminations, and other rejoicings; which have made ſuch an impreſſion upon the minds of the people, that in the place where they happened, and the contiguous pariſhes, ſeveral hundred perſons have already declared their knowledge and remembrance of this event, in ſpite of the great power of the claimant's adverſary in that quarter, and the great pains and indirect methods taken by his numberleſs agents and emiſſaries, as well as by thoſe who are intereſted with him in the event of the ſuit, to corrupt and ſuppreſs the evidence.

" Lord A——m, after the birth of his ſon, who was ſent to nurſe in the neighbourhood, according to the cuſtom of the country, (where people of the higheſt diſtinction

diſtinction put their children out to nurſe into farm-houſes and cabbins) lived in harmony with his lady for the ſpace of two years: but having by his folly and extravagance reduced himſelf to great difficulties, he demanded the remainder of her fortune from her father the Duke of B——, who abſolutely refuſed to part with a ſhilling until a proper ſettlement ſhould be made on his daughter, which by that time he had put out of his own power to make by his folly and extravagance.

"As her ladyſhip, by her endeavours to reform the œconomy of her houſe, had incurred the diſpleaſure of ſome idle, profligate fellows, who had faſtened themſelves upon her huſband, and helped to conſume his ſubſtance, they ſeized this opportunity of the duke's refuſal; and in order to be revenged upon the innocent lady, perſuaded Lord A——m, that the only means of extracting money from his grace would be to turn her away, on pretence of infidelity to his bed, for which, they hinted, there was but too much foundation. At their ſuggeſtions, a moſt infamous plan was projected; in the execution of which one P——, a poor, unbred, ſimple, country booby, whom they had decoyed into a ſnare, loſt one of his ears, and the injured lady retired the ſame day to New R—ſs, where ſhe continued ſeveral years. She did not, however, leave the houſe, without ſtruggling hard to carry her child along with her; but far from enjoying ſuch indulgence, ſtrict orders were given, that the boy ſhould not for the future be brought within her ſight. This baſe, inhuman treatment, inſtead of anſwering the end propoſed, produced ſuch a contrary effect, that the Duk of B——, by a codicil to his will, in which he reflects upon Lord A——m's evil temper, directed his executors to pay to his daughter an annuity of one hundred pounds, while her lord and ſhe ſhould continue to live ſeparate; and this allowance was to ceaſe on Lord A——m's death.

"While ſhe remained in this ſolitary ſituation, the

child was univerſally known and received as the legitimate ſon and heir of her lord, whoſe affection for the boy was ſo conſpicuous, that in the midſt of his own neceſſities, he never failed to maintain him in the dreſs and equipage of a young nobleman. In the courſe of his infancy, his father having often changed his place reſidence, the child was put under the inſtructions of a great many different ſchoolmaſters, ſo that he was perfectly well known in a great many different parts of the kingdom; and his mother ſeized all opportunities (which were but rare, on account of his father's orders to the contrary) of ſeeing and giving him proofs of her maternal tenderneſs, until ſhe ſet out for England, after having been long in a declining ſtate of health by a paralytical diſorder; upon the conſequence of which, ſuch dependence was placed by her inconſiderate huſband, who was by this time reduced to extreme poverty, that he actually married a woman whom he had long kept as a miſtreſs. This creature no ſooner underſtood that Lady A—— m was departed from Ireland, than ſhe openly avowed her marriage, and went about publickly with Lord A——m, viſiting his acquaintance in the character of his wife.

"From this æra may be dated the beginning of Mr. A——y's misfortunes: this artful woman, who had formerly treated the child with an appearance of fondneſs, in order to ingratiate herſelf with the father, now looking upon herſelf as ſufficiently eſtabliſhed in the family, thought it was high time to alter her beviour with regard to the unfortunate boy; and accordingly, for obvious reaſons, employed a thouſand artifices to alienate the heart of the weak father from his unhappy offspring: yet, notwithſtanding all her inſinuations, nature ſtill maintained her influence in his heart; and though ſhe often found means to irritate him by artful and malicious accuſations, his reſentment never extended farther than fatherly correction. She would have found it impoſſible to accompliſh his ruin, had not her efforts been reinforced by a new auxiliary,

liary, who was no other than his uncle, the present uſurper of his title and eſtate; yet even this confederacy was over-awed, in ſome meaſure, by the fear of alarming the unfortunate mother, until her diſtemper increaſed to a moſt deplorable degree of the dead palſy, and the death of her father had reduced her to a moſt forlorn and abject ſtate of diſtreſs. Then they ventured upon the execution of their projects; and (though their aims were widely different) concurred in their endeavours to remove the hapleſs boy, as the common obſtacle to both.

"Lord A——m, who (as I have already obſerved) was a man of weak intellects, and utterly void of any fixed principle of action, being by this time reduced to ſuch a pitch of miſery, that he was often obliged to pawn his wearing-apparel in order to procure the common neceſſaries of life; and having no other fund remaining, with which he could relieve his preſent neceſſities, except a ſale of the reverſion of the A——a eſtate, to which the nonage of his ſon was an effectual bar, he was adviſed by his virtuous brother, and the reſt of his counſellors, to ſurmount this difficulty by ſecreting his ſon, and ſpreading a report of his death. This honeſt project he the more readily embraced, becauſe he knew that no act of his could fruſtrate the child's ſucceſſion. Accordingly, the boy was removed from the ſchool at which he was boarded, to the houſe of one K—gh, an agent and accomplice of the preſent Earl of A——a, where he was kept ſeveral months cloſely confined; and in the mean time it was induſtriouſly reported that he was dead.

"This previous meaſure being taken, Lord A—m publiſhed advertiſements in the Gazettes, offering reverſions of the A——a eſtate to ſale; and emiſſaries of various kinds were employed, to inveigle ſuch as were innocent of the nature of the ſettlement of theſe eſtates, or ſtrangers to the affairs of his family. Some people, impoſed upon by the report of the child's death, were drawn in to purchaſe, thinking themſelves ſafe in the

concurrence of his lordſhip's brother, upon preſumption that he was next in remainder to the ſucceſſion; others, tempted by the ſmallneſs of the price, (which rarely exceeded half a year's purchaſe, as appears by many deeds) though they doubted the truth of the boy's being dead, ran ſmall riſks on the contingency of his dying before he ſhould be of age, or in hope of his being prevailed upon to confirm the grants of his father; and many more were treating with him on the ſame notions, when their tranſactions were ſuddenly interrupted, and the ſcheme of raiſing more money for the preſent defeated by the unexpected appearance of the boy, who being naturally ſprightly and impatient of reſtraint, had found means to break from his confinement, and wandered up and down the ſtreets of Dublin, avoiding his father's houſe, and chuſing to encounter all ſorts of diſtreſs, rather than ſubject himſelf again to the cruelty and malice of the woman who ſupplied his mother's place. Thus debarred his father's protection, and deſtitute of any fixed habitation, he herded with all the looſe, idle, and diſorderly youths in Dublin, ſkulking chiefly about the college, ſeveral members and ſtudents of which taking pity on his misfortunes, ſupplied him at different times with cloaths and money. In this unſettled and uncomfortable way of life did he remain from the year 1725 to the latter end of November 1727, at which time his father died ſo miſerably poor, that he was actually buried at the publick expence.

" This unfortunate nobleman was no ſooner dead, than his brother Richard, now Earl of A——a, taking advantage of the nonage and helpleſs ſituation of his nephew, ſeized upon all the papers of the defunct, and afterwards uſurped the title of Lord A——m, to the ſurprize of the ſervants and others who were acquainted with the affairs of the family. This uſurpation, bold as it was, produced no other effect than that of his being inſulted by the populace as he went through the ſtreets, and the refuſal of the king at arms

to enrol the certificate of his brother's having died without iſſue. The firſt of theſe inconveniencies he bore without any ſenſe of ſhame, though not without repining, conſcious that it would gradually vaniſh with the novelty of his invaſion; and as to the laſt, he conquered it by means well known and obvious.

"Nor will it ſeem ſtrange, that he ſhould thus invade the rights of an orphan with impunity, if people will conſider, that the late Lord A——m had not only ſquandered away his fortune with the moſt ridiculous extravagance, but alſo aſſociated himſelf with low company, ſo that he was little known, and leſs regarded, by perſons of any rank and figure in life; and his child, of conſequence, debarred of the advantages which might have accrued from valuable connections. And though it was univerſally known that Lady A——m had a ſon in Ireland, ſuch was the obſcurity in which the father had lived during the laſt years of his life, that few of the nobility could be ſuppoſed to be acquainted with the particular circumſtances of a tranſaction in which they had no concern, and which had happened at the diſtance of twelve years before the date of this uſurpation. Moreover, as their firſt information was no other than common fame, the publick clamour occaſioned by the ſeparation might inſpire ſuch as were ſtrangers to the family affairs with a miſtaken notion of the child's having been born about or after the time of that event. The hurry and buſtle occaſioned by the arrival of the lord lieutenant about this period, the reports induſtriouſly propagated of the claimant's death, the obſcurity and concealment in which the boy was obliged to live in order to elude the wicked attempts of his uncle, might alſo contribute to his peaceable enjoyment of an empty title: and, laſtly, Lord Chancellor W——m, whoſe immediate province it was to iſſue writs for Parliament, was an utter ſtranger in Ireland, unacquainted with the deſcents of families, and conſequently did not examine farther than the certificate enrolled in the books of the king at arms.

Over and above these circumstances, which naturally account for the success of the imposture, it may be observed, that the hapless youth had not one relation alive, on the side of his father, whose interest it was not to forward or connive at his destruction; that his grandfather the Duke of B—— was dead; and that his mother was then in England, in a forlorn, destitute, dying condition, secreted from the world, and even from her own relations, by her woman Mary H——, who had a particular interest to secrete her, and altogether dependant upon a miserable and precarious allowance from the Duchess of B——, to whose caprice she was moreover a most wretched slave.

"Notwithstanding these concurring circumstances in favour of the usurper, he did not think himself secure while the orphan had any chance of finding a friend who would undertake his cause; and therefore laid a plan for his being kidnapped, and sent to America as a slave. His coadjutor in this humane scheme was a person who carried on the trade of transporting servants to our plantations, and was deeply interested on this occasion, having for a mere trifle purchased of the late Lord A——m the reversion of a considerable part of the A——a estate; which shameful bargain was confirmed by the brother, but could never take place unless the boy could be effectually removed.

"Every thing being settled with this auxiliary, several ruffians were employed in search of the unhappy victim; and the first attempt that was made upon him, in which his uncle personally assisted, happening near one of the great markets of the city of Dublin, an honest butcher, with the assistance of his neighbours, rescued him by force from their cruel hands. This, however, was but a short respite; for (though warned by this adventure, the boy seldom crept out of his lurking places without the most cautious circumspection) he was, in March 1728, discovered by the diligence of his persecutors, and forcibly dragged on board of a ship bound for Newcastle on Delaware river in America, where

where he was sold as a slave, and kept to hard labour, much above his age or strength, for the space of thirteen years, during which he was transferred from one person to another.

"While he remained in this servile situation, he often mentioned, to those in whom he thought such confidence might be placed, the circumstances of his birth and title, together with the manner of his being exiled from his native country; although in this particular he neglected a caution which he had received in his passage, importing that such a discovery would cost him his life. Meanwhile the usurper quietly enjoyed his right: and to those who questioned him about his brother's son, constantly replied, that the boy had been dead for several years. And Arthur Earl of A——a dying in April 1737, he, upon pretence of being next heir, succeeded to the honours and estate of that nobleman.

The term of the nephew's bondage, which had been lengthened out beyond the usual time, on account of his repeated attempts to escape, being expired in the year 1740, he hired himself as a common sailor in a trading vessel bound to Jamaica; and there, being entered on board of one of his majesty's ships under the command of Admiral Vernon, openly declared his parentage and pretensions. This extraordinary claim, which made a great noise in the fleet, reaching the ears of one Lieutenant S——n, nearly related to the usurper's Irish wife, he believed the young gentleman to be an impostor; and thinking it was incumbent on him to discover the cheat, he went on board the ship to which the claimant belonged, and having heard the account which he gave of himself, was, notwithstanding his prepossessions, convinced of the truth of what he alledged. On his return to his own ship, he chanced to mention this extraordinary affair upon the quarter-deck, in the hearing of Mr. B——n, one of the midshipmen, who had formerly been at school with Mr. A——y. This young gentleman not only told the lieutenant that he

he had been ſchool-fellow with Lord A——m's ſon, but alſo declared that he ſhould know him again, if not greatly altered, as he ſtill retained a perfect idea of his countenance.

"Upon this intimation, the lieutenant propoſed that the experiment ſhould be tried; and went with the midſhipman on board the ſhip that the claimant was in, for that purpoſe. After all the ſailors had aſſembled upon deck, Mr. B——n, caſting his eyes around, immediately diſtinguiſhed Mr. A——y in the crowd, and laying his hand on his ſhoulder—"This is the man!" ſaid he; affirming at the ſame time, that while he continued at ſchool with him, the claimant was reputed and reſpected as Lord A——m's ſon and heir, and maintained in all reſpects ſuitable to the dignity of his rank. Nay, he was, in like manner, recognized by ſeveral other perſons in the fleet, who had known him in his infancy.

"Theſe things being reported to the admiral, he generouſly ordered him to be ſupplied with neceſſaries, and treated like a gentleman; and, in his next diſpatches, tranſmitted an account of the affair to the Duke of Newcaſtle, among the other tranſactions of the fleet.

"In September or October, 1741, Mr. A——y arrived in London; and the firſt perſon to whom he applied for advice and aſſiſtance was a man of the law, nearly related to the families of A——a and A——m, and well acquainted with the particular affairs of each; who far from treating him as a baſtard and impoſtor, received him with civility and ſeeming kindneſs, aſked him to eat, preſented him with a piece of money, and excuſing himſelf from meddling in the affair, adviſed him to go to Ireland, as the moſt proper place for commencing a ſuit for the recovery of his right.

"Before the young gentleman had an opportunity, or indeed any inclination to comply with this advice, he was accidentally met in the ſtreet by that ſame H——n, who, as I have mentioned, gave Mr. M——r the firſt

insight into the affair; this man immediately knew the claimant, having been formerly an agent for his father, and afterwards a creature of his uncle's, with whom he was, not without reason, suspected to be concerned in kidnapping and transporting his nephew. Be that as it will, his connexions with the usurper were now broke off by a quarrel, in consequence of which he had thrown up his agency; and he invited the hapless stranger to his house, with a view of making all possible advantage of such a guest.

"There he had not long remained, when his treacherous landlord, tampering with his inexperience, effected a marriage between him and the daughter of one of his own friends, who lodged in his house at the same time: but afterwards, seeing no person of consequence willing to espouse his cause, he looked upon him as an incumbrance, and wanted to rid his hands of him accordingly. He remembered that Mr. M——r had expressed himself with all the humanity of apprehension in favour of the unfortunate young nobleman, before his arrival in England; and being well acquainted with the generosity of his disposition, he no sooner understood that he was returned from France, than he waited upon him with an account of Mr. A——y's being safely arrived. Mr. M——r was sincerely rejoiced to find that a person who had been so cruelly injured, and undergone so long and continued a scene of distress, was restored to a country where he was sure of obtaining justice, and where every good man (as he imagined) would make the cause his own: and, being informed that the youth was in want of necessaries, he gave twenty guineas to H——n for his use, and promised to do him all the service in his power; but had no intention to take upon himself the whole weight of such an important affair, or indeed to appear in the cause, until he should be fully and thoroughly satisfied that the claimant's pretensions were well founded.

"In the mean time, H——n insinuating that the young gentleman was not safe in his present lodging

from

from the machinations of his enemies, M——r accommodated him with an apartment in his own houſe; where he was at great pains to remedy the defect in his education, by rendering him fit to appear as a gentleman in the world. Having received from him all the intelligence he could give, relating to his own affair, he laid the caſe before counſel, and diſpatched a perſon to Ireland, to make farther enquiries upon the ſame ſubject; who, on his firſt arrival in that kingdom, found the claimant's birth was as publickly known as any circumſtance of that kind could poſſibly be at ſo great a diſtance of time.

"The uſurper and his friends gave all the interruption in their power to any reſearches concerning that affair; and had recourſe to every art and expedient that could be invented, to prevent its being brought to a legal diſcuſſion: privilege bills in chancery, orders of court ſurreptitiouſly and illegally obtained, and every other invention was made uſe of to bar and prevent a fair and honeſt trial by a jury. The uſurper himſelf and his agents, at the ſame time that they formed divers conſpiracies againſt his life, in vain endeavoured to detach Mr. M——r from the orphan's cauſe by innumerable artifices, inſinuating, cajoling, and miſrepreſenting, with ſurprizing dexterity and perſeverance.

"His protector, far from being ſatisfied with their reaſons, was not only deaf to their remonſtrances, but, believing him in danger from their repeated efforts, had him privately conveyed into the country; where an unhappy accident (which he hath ever ſince ſincerely regretted) furniſhed his adverſary with a colourable pretext to cut him off in the beginning of his career.

"A man happening to loſe his life by the accidental diſcharge of a piece that chanced to be in the young gentleman's hands, the account of this misfortune no ſooner reached the ears of his uncle, than he expreſſed the moſt immoderate joy at having found ſo good a handle for deſtroying him under colour of law.

He

He immediately conftituted himfelf profecutor; fet his emiffaries at work to fecure a coroner's inqueft fuited to his cruel purpofes; fet out for the place in perfon, to take care that the prifoner fhould not efcape; infulted him in gaol in the moft inhuman manner; employed a whole army of attornies and agents to fpirit up and carry on a moft virulent profecution; practifed all the unfair methods that could be invented, in order that the unhappy gentleman fhould be tranfported to Newgate, from the healthy prifon to which he was at firft committed; endeavoured to inveigle him into deftructive confeffions; and not to mention other more infamous arts employed in the affair of evidence, attempted to furprize him upon his trial in the abfence of his witneffes and counfel, contrary to a previous agreement with the profecutor's own attorney: nay, he even appeared in perfon upon the bench at the trial, in order to intimidate the evidence, and brow-beat the unfortunate prifoner at the bar; and expended above a thoufand pounds in that profecution. In fpite of all his wicked efforts, however, which were defeated by the fpirit and indefatigable induftry of Mr. M——r, the young gentleman was honourably acquitted, to the evident fatisfaction of all the impartial; the misfortune that gave a handle for that unnatural profecution, appearing to a demonftration to have been a mere accident.

"In a few months his protector, who had now openly efpoufed his caufe, (taking with him two gentlemen to witnefs his tranfactions) conducted him to his native country, with a view to be better informed of the ftrength of his pretenfions, than he could be by the intelligences he had hitherto received, or by the claimant's own dark and almoft obliterated remembrance of the facts which were effential to be known. Upon their arrival in Dublin, application was made to thofe perfons whom Mr. A——y had named as his fchoolmafters and companions, together with the fervants and neighbours of his father. Thefe, though examined fe-

parately,

parately, without having the leaſt previous intimation of what the claimant had reported, agreed in their accounts with him, as well as with one another, and mentioned many other people as acquainted with the ſame facts, to whom Mr. M——r had recourſe, and ſtill met with the ſame unvaried information. By theſe means he made ſuch progreſs in his enquiries, that in leſs than two months no fewer than one hundred perſons from different quarters of the kingdom, either perſonally or by letters, communicated their knowledge of the claimant, in declarations conſonant with one another, as well as with the accounts he gave of himſelf. Several ſervants who had lived with his father, and been deceived with the ſtory of his death, ſo induſtriouſly propagated by his uncle, no ſooner heard of his being in Dublin, than they came from different parts of the country to ſee him; and though great pains were taken to deceive them, they nevertheleſs knew him at firſt ſight; ſome of them fell upon their knees to thank Heaven for his preſervation, embraced his legs, and ſhed tears of joy for his return.

" Although the conduct of his adverſary, particularly in the abovementioned proſecution, together with the evidence that already appeared, were ſufficient to convince all mankind of the truth of the claimant's pretenſions, Mr. M——r, in order to be farther ſatisfied, reſolved to ſee how he would be received upon the ſpot where he was born; juſtly concluding, that if he was really an impoſtor, the baſtard of a kitchen-wench, produced in a country entirely poſſeſſed by his enemy and his allies, he muſt be looked upon in that place with the utmoſt deteſtation and contempt.

" This his intention was no ſooner known to the adverſe party, than their agents and friends, from all quarters, repaired to that place with all poſſible diſpatch, and uſed all their influence with the people, in remonſtrances, threats, and all the other arts they could deviſe, not only to diſcountenance the claimant upon his arrival, but even to ſpirit up a mob to inſult him.

Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, and the ſervile awe and ſubjection in which tenants are kept by their landlords in that part of the country, as ſoon as it was known that Mr. A——y approached the town, the inhabitants crowded out in great multitudes to receive and welcome him, and accompanied him into town with acclamations and other expreſſions of joy, inſomuch that the agents of his adverſary durſt not ſhew their faces. The ſovereign of the corporation, who was a particular creature and favourite of the uſurper, and whoſe all depended upon the iſſue of the cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtranger's right, and ſo much awed by the behaviour of the people, who knew that conſciouſneſs, that he did not think it ſafe, even to preſerve the appearance of neutrality upon this occaſion, but actually held the ſtirrup while Mr. A——y diſmounted from his horſe.

" This ſenſe of conviction in the people manifeſted itſelf ſtill more powerfully, when he returned to the ſame place in the year 1744, about which time Lord A——a being informed of his reſolution, determined again to be before-hand with him, and ſet out in perſon with his agents and friends, ſome of whom were detached before him, to prepare for his reception, and induce the people to meet him in a body, and accompany him to town, with ſuch expreſſions of welcome as they had before beſtowed on his nephew; but in ſpite of all their art and intereſt, he was ſuffered to paſs through the ſtreet in a mournful ſilence; and though ſeveral barrels of beer were produced, to court the favour of the populace, they had no other effect than that of drawing their ridicule upon the donor; whereas, when Mr. A——y, two days afterwards appeared, all the inhabitants, with garlands, ſtreamers, muſick, and other enſigns of joy, crouded out to meet him, and uſhered him into town with ſuch demonſtrations of pleaſure and good-will, that the noble peer found it convenient to hide himſelf from the reſentment of his own tenants, the effects of which he muſt have ſeverely felt, had not he

been ſcreened by the timely remonſtrances of Mr. M——r, and the other gentleman who accompanied his competitor.

"Nor did his apprehenſion vaniſh with the tranſaction of this day; the town was again in uproar on the Sunday following, when it was known that Mr. A—y intended to come thither from Dunmain to church: they went out to meet him as before, and conducted him to the church-door with acclamations, which terrified his uncle to ſuch a degree, that he fled with precipitation in a boat, and ſoon after entirely quitted the place.

"It would be almoſt an endleſs taſk to enumerate the particular ſteps that were taken by one ſide to promote, and by the other to delay the trial: the young gentleman's adverſaries finding that they could not, by all the ſubterfuges and arts they had uſed, evade it, repeated attempts were made to aſſaſſinate him and his protector, and every obſtruction thrown in the way of his cauſe which craft could invent, villainy execute, and undue influence confirm. But all theſe difficulties were ſurmounted by the vigilance, conſtancy, courage, and ſagacity of M——r; and at laſt the affair was brought to a very ſolemn trial at bar, which being continued, by ſeveral adjournments, from the eleventh to the twenty-fifth day of November, a verdict was found for the claimant by a jury of gentlemen, which, in point of reputation and property, cannot be eaſily paralleled in the annals of that or any other country; a jury that could by no means be ſuſpected of prepoſſeſſions in favour of Mr. A——y, (to whoſe perſon they were abſolute ſtrangers) eſpecially if we conſider that a gentleman in their neighbourhood, who was nephew to the foreman, and nearly related to ſome of the reſt of their number, forfeited a conſiderable eſtate by their deciſion.

"This verdict," ſaid the parſon, "gave the higheſt ſatisfaction to all impartial perſons that were within reach of being duly informed of their proceedings, and

and of the different genius and conduct of the parties engaged in the contest; but more especially to such as were in court (as I was) at the trial, and had an opportuity of observing the characters and behaviour of the persons who appeared there to give evidence. To such it was very apparent, that all the witnesses produced there on the part of the uncle, were either his tenants, dependents, pot-companions, or persons some way or other interested in the issue of the suit, and remarkable for a low kind of cunning; that many of them were persons of profligate lives, who deserved no credit; that (independent of the levity of their characters) those of them who went under the denomination of colonels (Colonel L——fts alone excepted, who had nothing to say, and was only brought there in order to give credit to that party) made so ridiculous a figure, and gave so absurd, contradictory, and inconsistent an evidence, as no court or jury could give the least degree of credit to. On the other hand it was observed, that the nephew and Mr. M——r, his chief manager, (being absolute strangers in that country, and unacquainted with the characters of the persons they had to deal with) were obliged to lay before the court and jury such evidence as came to their hand, some of whom plainly appeared to have been put upon them by their adversaries, with a design to hurt. It was also manifest, that the witnesses produced for Mr. A——y were such as could have no manner of connection with him, nor any dependence whatsoever upon him, to influence their evidence; for the far greatest part of them had never seen him from his infancy till the trial began; and many of them (though poor and undignified with the title of colonels) were people of unblemished character, of great simplicity, and such as no man in his senses would pitch upon to support a bad cause. It is plain that the jury (whose well-known honour, impartiality, and penetration, must be revered by all who are acquainted with them) were not under the least difficulty about their verdict; for they were not inclosed above

 half

half an hour when they returned with it. These gentlemen could not help observing the great inequality of the parties engaged, the great advantages that the uncle had in every other respect (except the truth and justice of his case) over the nephew, by means of his vast possessions, and of his power and influence all round the place of his birth; nor could the contrast between the different geniuses of the two parties escape their observation. They could not but see and conclude, that a person who had confessedly transported and sold his orphan nephew into slavery; who, on his return, had carried on so unwarrantable and cruel a prosecution to take away his life, under colour of law; and who had also given such glaring proofs of his skill and dexterity in the management of witnesses for that cruel purpose; was in like manner capable of exerting the same happy talent on this occasion, when his all was at stake; more especially, as he had so many others who were equally interested with himself, and whose abilities in that respect fell nothing short of his own, to second him in it. The gentlemen of the jury had also a near view of the manner in which the witnesses delivered their testimonies, and had from thence an opportunity of observing many circumstances and distinguishing characteristicks of truth and falshood, from which a great deal could be gathered that could not be adequately conveyed by any printed account, how exact soever; consequently they must have been much better judges of the evidence on which they founded their verdict, than any person who had not the same opportunity can possibly be.

"These, Mr. Pickle, were my reflections on what I had occasion to observe concerning that famous trial; and on my return to England two years after, I could not help pitying the self-sufficiency of some people, who, at this distance, pretended to pass their judgment on that verdict, with as great positiveness as if they had been in the secrets of the cause, or upon the jury who tried it; and that from no better authority than

the declamations of Lord A——a's emiſſaries, and ſome falſified printed accounts, artfully cooked up on purpoſe to miſlead and deceive.

"But to return from this digreſſion: Lord A——a, the defendant in that cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtrength and merits of his injured nephew's caſe, and that a verdict would go againſt him, that he ordered a writ of error to be made out before the trial was ended; and the verdict was no ſooner given, than he immediately lodged it, though he well knew he had no manner of error to aſſign. This expedient was practiſed merely for vexation and delay, in order to keep Mr. A——y from the poſſeſſion of the ſmall eſtate he had recovered by the verdict; that his ſlender funds being exhauſted, he might be deprived of other means to proſecute his right; and, by the moſt oppreſſive contrivances and ſcandalous chicanery, it has been kept up to this day, without being able to aſſign the leaſt ſhadow of any error.

"Lord A——a was not the only antagoniſt that Mr. A—y had to deal with; all the different branches of the A——a family, who had been worrying one another at law ever ſince the death of the late Earl of A——a, about the partition of his great eſtate, were now firmly united in an aſſociation againſt this unfortunate gentleman; mutual deeds were executed among them, by which many great lordſhips and eſtates were given up by the uncle to perſons who had no right to poſſeſs them, in order to engage them to ſide with him againſt his nephew, in withholding the unjuſt poſſeſſion of the remainder.

"Theſe confederates having held ſeveral conſultations againſt their common enemy, and finding that his cauſe gathered daily ſtrength ſince the trial, by the acceſſion of many witneſſes of figure and reputation who had not been heard of before; and that the only chance they had to prevent the ſpeedy eſtabliſhment of his right, and their own deſtruction, was by ſtripping Mr. M——r of the little money that yet remained, and

ſtopping all farther reſources whereby he might be enabled to proceed; they therefore came to a determined reſolution to carry that hopeful ſcheme into execution; and in purſuance thereof they have left no expedient or ſtratagem, how extraordinary or ſcandalous ſoever, unpractiſed, to diſtreſs Mr. A——y and that gentleman. For that end, all the oppreſſive arts, and dilatory, expenſive contrivances that the fertile invention of the loweſt pettifoggers of the law could poſſibly deviſe, have with great dexterity been played off againſt them in fruitleſs quibbling and malicious ſuits, entirely foreign to the merits of the cauſe. Not to mention numberleſs other acts of oppreſſion, the moſt extraordinary and unprecedented proceedings; by means whereof this ſham writ of error hath been kept on foot ever ſince November 1743, is to me," ſaid the doctor, " a moſt flagrant inſtance, not only of the prevalence of power and money, (when employed, as in the preſent caſe, againſt an unfortunate helpleſs man, diſabled, as he is, of the means of aſcertaining his right) but of the badneſs of a cauſe, that hath recourſe to ſo many iniquitous expedients to ſupport it.

" In a word, the whole conduct of Lord A——a and his party, from the beginning to this time, hath been ſuch, as ſufficiently manifeſts that it could proceed from no other motives than a conſciouſneſs of Mr. A——y's right, and of their own illegal uſurpations, and from a terror of truſting the merits of their caſe to a fair diſcuſſion by the laws of their country; and that the intention and main drift of all their proceedings plainly tends to ſtifle and ſmother the merits of the caſe from the knowledge of the world, by oppreſſive arts and ingenious delays, rather than truſt it to the candid determination of an honeſt jury. What elſe could be the motives of kidnapping the claimant, and tranſporting him when an infant; of the various attempts made upon his life ſince his return; of the attempts to diveſt him of all aſſiſtance to aſcertain his right, by endeavouring ſo ſolicitouſly to prevail on Mr. M——r to

abandon

abandon him in the beginning; of retaining an army of counſel, before any ſuit had been commenced; of the many ſiniſter attempts to prevent the trial at bar; of the various arts made uſe of to terrify any one from appearing as witneſs for the claimant, and to ſeduce thoſe who had appeared; of the ſhameleſs, unprecedented, low tricks, now practiſed to keep him out of the poſſeſſion of that eſtate for which he had obtained the verdict, thereby to diſable him from bringing his cauſe to a farther hearing; and of the attempts made to buy up Mr. M——r's debts, and to ſpirit up ſuits againſt him. Is it not obvious, from all theſe circumſtances, as well as from the obſtruction they have given to the attorney-general's proceeding, to make a report to his majeſty on the claimant's petition to the king for the peerage, which was referred by his majeſty to that gentleman ſo far back as 1743; that all their efforts are bent to that one point of ſtifling, rather than ſuffering the merits of this cauſe to come to a fair and candid hearing; and that the ſole conſideration at preſent between them and this unfortunate man, is not whether he is right or wrong, but whether he ſhall or ſhall not find money to bring this cauſe to a final determination.

" Lord A—— and his confederates not thinking themſelves ſafe with all theſe expedients, while there was a poſſibility of their antagoniſt's obtaining any aſſiſtance from ſuch as humanity, compaſſion, generoſity, or a love of juſtice, might induce to lay open their purſes to his aſſiſtance in aſcertaining his right, have, by themſelves and their numerous emiſſaries, employed all the arts of calumny, ſlander, and detraction, againſt him, by traducing his cauſe, vilifying his perſon, and moſt baſely and cruelly tearing his character to pieces by a thouſand miſrepreſentations, purpoſely invented and induſtriouſly propagated in all places of reſort, which is a kind of cowardly aſſaſſination that there is no guarding againſt: yet, in ſpite of all theſe machinations, and the ſhameful indifference of mankind, who ſtand aloof unconcerned, and ſee this unhappy gentleman

man moſt inhumanly oppreſſed by the weight of lawleſs power and faction, M——r, far from ſuffering himſelf to be dejected by the multiplying difficulties that croud upon him, ſtill exerts himſelf with amazing fortitude and aſſiduity, and will (I doubt not) bring the affair he began and carried on with ſo much ſpirit, while his finances laſted, to an happy concluſion.

"It would exceed the bounds of my intention, and perhaps treſpaſs too much upon your time, were I to enumerate the low artifices and ſhameful quibbles, by which the uſurper has found means to procraſtinate the deciſion of the conteſt between him and his hapleſs nephew, or to give a detail of the damage and perplexity which Mr. M——r has ſuſtained and been involved in, by the treachery and ingratitude of ſome who liſted themſelves under him in the proſecution of this affair, and by the villainy of others, who, under various pretences of material diſcoveries they had to make, &c. had faſtened themſelves upon him, and continued to do all the miſchief in their power, until the cloven foot was detected.

"One inſtance, however, is ſo flagrantly flagitious, that I cannot reſiſt the inclination I feel to relate it, as an example of the moſt infernal perfidy that perhaps ever entered the human heart. I have already mentioned the part which H——n acted in the beginning of M——r's connection with the unfortunate ſtranger, and hinted that the ſaid H——n lay under many obligations to that gentleman, before Mr. A——y's arrival in England. He had been chief agent to Lord A——a, and, as it afterwards appeared, received ſeveral payments of a ſecret penſion which that lord enjoyed, for which he either could not, or would not, account. His lordſhip therefore, in order to compel him to it, took out writs againſt him, and his houſe was continually ſurrounded with catchpoles for the ſpace of two whole years.

"Mr. M—— believing, from H—n's own account of the matter, that the poor man was greatly injured, and

and profecuted on account of his attachment to the unhappy young gentleman, did him all the good offices in his power, and became fecurity for him on feveral occafions: nay, fuch was his opinion of his integrity, that after Mr. A——y was cleared of the profecution carried on againft him by his uncle, his perfon was trufted to the care of this hypocrite, who defired that the young gentleman might lodge at his houfe for the convenience of air, M——r's own occafions calling him often in the country.

"Having thus, by his confummate diffimulation, acquired fuch a valuable charge, he wrote a letter to one of Lord A——a's attornies, offering to betray Mr. A——y, provided his lordfhip would fettle his account and give him a difcharge for eight hundred pounds of the penfion which he had received and not accounted for. Mr. M——r, informed of this treacherous propofal, immediately removed his lodger from his houfe into his own, without affigning his reafons for fo doing until he was obliged to declare it, in order to free himfelf from the importunities of H——n, who earneftly folicited his return. This mifcreant finding himfelf detected and difappointed in his villainous defign, was fo much enraged at his mifcarriage, that, forgetting all the benefits he had received from M—— for a feries of years, he practifed all the mifchief that his malice could contrive againft him; and at length entered into a confederacy with one G—ft—ey, and feveral other abandoned wretches, who, as before faid, under various pretences of being able to make material difcoveries, and otherwife to ferve the caufe, had found means to be employed in fome extra bufinefs relating to it, though their real intention was to betray the claimant.

"These confederates, in conjunction with fome auxiliaries of infamous character, being informed that Mr. M——r was on the point of fecuring a confiderable fum, to enable him to profecute Mr. A——y's right, and to bring it to a happy conclufion, contrived a

deep-

deep-laid ſcheme to diſappoint him in it, and at once to ruin the cauſe. And previous meaſures being taken for that wicked purpoſe, they impoſed upon the young gentleman's inexperience and credulity, by inſinuations equally falſe, plauſible, and malicious: to which they at length gained his belief, by the mention of ſome circumſtances that gave what they alledged an air of probability, and even of truth. They ſwore that Mr. M——r had taken out an action againſt him for a very large ſum of money; that they had actually ſeen the writ; that the intention of it was to throw him into priſon for life, and ruin his cauſe, in conſequence of an agreement made by him with Lord A——a, and his other enemies, to retrieve the money that he had laid out in the cauſe.

"This plauſible tale was enforced with ſuch an air of truth, candour, and earneſt concern for his ſafety, and was ſtrengthened by ſo many imprecations and corroborating circumſtances of their invention, as would have ſtaggered one of much greater experience and knowledge of mankind than Mr. A——y could be ſuppoſed at that time. The notion of perpetual impriſonment, and the certain ruin they made him believe his cauſe was threatened with, worked upon his imagination to ſuch a degree, that he ſuffered himſelf to be led like a lamb to the ſlaughter, by this artful band of villains; who ſecreted him at the lodgings of one Pr—nt—ce, an intimate of G—ſt—ey's, for ſeveral days, under colour of his being hunted by bailiffs employed by Mr. M——r, where he was not only obliged by them to change his name, but even his wife was not ſuffered to have acceſs to him.

"Their deſign was to have ſold him, or drawn him into a ruinous compromiſe with his adverſaries, for a valuable conſideration to themſelves. But as no ties are binding among ſuch a knot of villains, the reſt of the conſpirators were jockied by G—ſt—ey; who, in order to monopolize the advantage to himſelf, hurried his prize into the country, and ſecreted him even from

his

his confederates, in a place of concealment one hundred miles from London, under the ſame ridiculous pretence of M——r's having taken out a writ againſt him, and of bailiffs being in purſuit of him every where round London.

" He was no ſooner there than G—ſt—ey, as a previous ſtep to the other villainy he intended, tricked him out of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds, under colour of his having a perſon ready to advance the like ſum upon it, as an immediate fund for carrying on his cauſe; aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that he had a ſet of gentlemen ready, who were willing to advance twenty-five thouſand pounds more for the ſame purpoſe, and to allow him five hundred pounds a year for his maintenance, till his cauſe ſhould be made an end of, provided that Mr. M——r ſhould have no farther concern with him or his cauſe.

" Mr. A——y, having by this time received ſome intimations of the deceit that had been put upon him, made anſwer, that he ſhould look upon himſelf as a very ungrateful monſter, indeed, if he deſerted a perſon who had ſaved his life, and ſo generouſly ventured his own, together with his fortune, in his cauſe, until he ſhould firſt be certain of the truth of what was alledged of him, and abſolutely rejected the propoſal. G—ſt—ey, who had no other view in making it than to cover the ſecret villainy he meditated againſt him, and to facilitate the execution thereof, eaſily receded from it when he found Mr. A——y ſo averſe to it, and undertook nevertheleſs to raiſe the money; adding, that he might, if he pleaſed, return to Mr. M——r whenever it was ſecured. The whole drift of this pretended undertaking to raiſe the twenty-five thouſand pounds, was only to lay a foundation for a dextrous contrivance to draw Mr. A——y unwarily into the execution of a deed, relinquiſhing all his right and title, under a notion of its beeing a deed to ſecure the repayment of that ſum.

" G—ſt—ey, having, as he imagined, ſo far paved

the way for the execution of ſuch a deed, enters into an agreement with an agent, employed for that purpoſe by Mr. A——ey's adverſaries, purporting, that in conſideration of the payment of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds, which he G—ſt—ey, had, as he pretended, laid out in Mr. A——ey's cauſe, and of an annuity of ſeven hundred pounds a year, he was to procure for them from Mr. A——ey a deed ready executed, relinquiſhing all right and title to the An—ey eſtate and honours. Every thing being prepared for the execution of this infernal ſcheme, unknown to Mr. A——ey, G—ſt—ey then thought proper to ſend for him to town from his retirement, in order, as he pretended, to execute a ſecurity of twenty-five thouſand pounds.

"This intended victim to that villain's avarice no ſooner arrived in town, full of hopes of money to carry on his cauſe, and of agreeably ſurprizing his friend and protector Mr. M—— with ſo ſeaſonable and unexpected a reinforcement, than an unforeſeen difficulty aroſe, concerning the payment of G—ſt—ey's ſix thouſand pound bond. That money was to have been raiſed out of the eſtate of a lunatick, which could not be done without the leave of the court of chancery, to whom an account muſt have been given of the intended application of it. While preparations were making to rectify this omiſſion, G—ſt—ey immediately carried Mr. A——ey again into the country, leſt he ſhould happen to be undeceived by ſome means or other.

"In the mean time, this wicked machination was providentially diſcovered by Mr. M——r, before it could be carried into execution, by means of the jealouſies that aroſe among the conſpirators themſelves; and was, at the ſame time, confirmed to him by a perſon whom the very agent for the An——ey party had entruſted with the ſecret. M——r no ſooner detected it, than he communicated his diſcovery to one of Mr. A——ey's counſel, a man of great worth; and immediately thereupon took proper meaſures to defeat it. He then found means to lay open to Mr. A——ey himſelf,

himſelf, the treacherous ſcheme that was laid for his deſtruction: he was highly ſenſible of it; and could never afterwards reflect on the ſnare that he had ſo unwarily been drawn into, and had ſo narrowly eſcaped, without a mixture of horror, ſhame, and gratitude to his deliverer.

"The conſummate aſſurance of the monſters who were engaged in this plot, after they had been detected, and upbraided with their treachery, is ſcarce to be paralleled; for they not only owned the fact of ſpiriting Mr. A——ey away, in the manner above mentioned, but juſtified their doing it as tending to his ſervice. They alſo maintained, that they had actually ſecured the twenty-five thouſand pounds for him, though they never could name any one perſon who was to have advanced the money. No man was more active in this ſcheme than H——n; nor any man more ſolicitous to keep Mr. A——ey up in the falſe impreſſions he had received, or in projecting methods to ruin his protector, than he.

"Among many other expedients for that purpoſe, a moſt malicious attempt was made to lodge an information againſt him for treaſonable practices with the ſecretary of ſtate, notwithſtanding the repeated proofs he had given of his loyalty; and as a preparatory ſtep to his accuſation, which this traitor dictated, was copied by another perſon, and actually ſent to the Earl of C——d, importing that the perſon who copied the letter had an affair of conſequence to communicate to his lordſhip, if he would appoint a time of receiving the information. But that perſon, upon full conviction of the villainy of the ſcheme, abſolutely refuſed to proceed farther in it; ſo that his malice once more proved abortive: and before he had time to execute any other contrivance of the ſame nature, he was impriſoned in this very gaol for debt.

"Here, finding his creditors inexorable, and himſelf deſtitute of all other reſource, he made application to the very man whom he had injured in ſuch an outra-

geous manner; ſet forth his deplorable caſe in the moſt pathetick terms; and intreated him, with the moſt abject humility, to uſe his influence in his behalf. The diſtreſs of this varlet immediately diſarmed M——r of his reſentment, and even excited his compaſſion. Without ſending any anſwer to his remonſtrances, he interceded for him with his creditors; and the perſon to whom he was chiefly indebted, refuſing to releaſe him without ſecurity, this unwearied benefactor joined with the priſoner in a bond for above two hundred and forty pounds, for which he obtained his releaſe.

"He was no ſooner diſcharged, however, than he entered into freſh combinations with G——y and others, in order to thwart his deliverer in his ſchemes of raiſing money, and otherwiſe to diſtreſs and deprive him of liberty; for which purpoſe, no art or induſtry (perjury not excepted) hath been ſpared. And, what is ſtill more extraordinary, this perfidious monſter having found money to take up the bond, in conſequence of which he regained his freedom, hath procured a writ againſt M——r, upon that very obligation; and taken aſſignments to ſome other debts of that gentleman, with the ſame Chriſtian intention. But, hitherto, he hath by ſurprizing ſagacity and unſhaken reſolution baffled all their infernal contrivances, and retorted ſome of their machinations on their own heads. At this time, when he is ſuppoſed by ſome, and repreſented by others, as under the circumſtances of oblivion and deſpondence, he proceeds in his deſign with the utmoſt calmneſs and intrepidity, meditating ſchemes, and ripening meaſures, that will one day confound his enemies, and attract the notice and admiration of mankind."

Peregrine having thanked the prieſt for his obliging information, expreſſed his ſurprize at the ſcandalous inattention of the world to an affair of ſuch importance: obſerving, that, by ſuch inhuman neglect, this unfortunate young gentleman, Mr. A——ey, was abſolutely deprived of all the benefit of ſociety; the ſole end of

which

which is, to protect the rights, redress the grievances, and promote the happiness of individuals. As for the character of M——r, he said it was so romantically singular in all its circumstances, that, though other motives were wanting, curiosity alone would induce him to seek his acquaintance: but he did not at all wonder at the ungrateful returns which had been made to his generosity by H——n and many others, whom he had served in a manner that few besides him would have done; for he had long been convinced of the truth conveyed in these lines of a celebrated Italian author:

"*Li beneficii, che per la loro grandezza, non puonno* "*esser guiderdonati, con la scelerata moneta dell' in*-"*gratitudine, sono pagati.*"

"The story which you have related of that young gentleman," said he, "bears a very strong resemblance to the fate of a Spanish nobleman, as it was communicated to me by one of his own intimate friends at Paris. The Countess D'Alvarez died immediately after the birth of a son, and the husband surviving her but three years, the child was left sole heir to his honours and estate, under the guardianship of his uncle, who had a small fortune and a great many children. This inhuman relation, coveting the wealth of his infant ward, formed a design against the life of the helpless orphan, and trusted the execution of it to his valet de chambre, who was tempted to undertake the murder by the promise of a considerable reward. He accordingly stabbed the boy with a knife, in three different places, on the right side of his neck: but as he was not used to such barbarous attempts, his hand failed in the performance; and he was seized with such remorse, that, perceiving the wounds were not mortal, he carried the hapless victim to the house of a surgeon, by whose care they were healed; and in the mean time, that he might not forfeit his recompence, found means to persuade his employer, that his orders were performed. A bundle being made up for the purpose, was publickly interred as the

the body of the child, who was ſaid to have been ſuddenly carried off by a convulſion: and the uncle, without oppoſition, ſucceeded to his honours and eſtate. The boy being cured of his hurts, was, about the age of ſix, delivered, with a ſmall ſum of money, to a merchant juſt embarking for Turky; who was given to underſtand, that he was the baſtard of a man of quality, and that for family reaſons it was neceſſary to conceal his birth.

"While the unfortunate orphan remained in this deplorable ſtate of bondage, all the children of the uſurper died one after another; and he himſelf being taken dangerouſly ill, attributed all his afflictions to the juſt judgment of God, and communicated his anxiety on that ſubject to the valet de chambre, who had been employed in the murder of his nephew. That domeſtick, in order to quiet his maſter's conſcience, and calm the perturbation of his ſpirits, confeſſed what he had done, and gave him hopes of ſtill finding the boy by dint of induſtry and expence. The unhappy child being the only hope of the family of Alvarez, the uncle immediately ordered a minute enquiry to be ſet on foot; in conſequence of which he was informed that the orphan had been ſold to a Turk, who had afterwards transferred him to an Engliſh merchant, by whom he was conveyed to London.

"An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to this capital, where he underſtood that the unhappy exile had, in conſideration of his faithful ſervices, been bound apprentice to a French barber-ſurgeon; and after he had ſufficiently qualified himſelf in that profeſſion, been received into the family of the Count de Gallas, at that time the emperor's ambaſſador at the court of London. From the houſe of this nobleman he was traced into the ſervice of Count D'Oberſtorf, where he had married his lady's chamber maid, and then gone to ſettle as a ſurgeon in Bohemia.

"In the courſe of theſe enquiries ſeveral years elapſed; his uncle, who was very much attached to the

houſe

houſe of Auſtria, lived at Barcelona when the father of this empreſs-queen reſided in that city, and lent him a very conſiderable ſum of money in the moſt preſſing emergency of his affairs; and when that prince was on the point of returning to Germany, the old count finding his end approaching, ſent his father-confeſſor to his majeſty, with a circumſtantial account of the barbarity he had practiſed againſt his nephew, for which he implored forgiveneſs, and begged he would give orders, that the orphan, when found, ſhould inherit the dignities and fortune which he had unjuſtly uſurped.

"His majeſty aſſured the old man, that he might make himſelf eaſy on that ſcore, and ordered the confeſſor to follow him to Vienna, immediately after the count's death, in order to aſſiſt his endeavours in finding out the injured heir. The prieſt did not fail to yield obedience to this command: he informed himſelf of certain natural marks on the young count's body, which were known to the nurſe and women who attended him in his infancy; and with a gentleman whom the emperor ordered to accompany him, ſet out for Bohemia, where he ſoon found the object of his enquiry, in the capacity of major-domo to a nobleman of that country, he having quitted his profeſſion of ſurgery for that office.

"He was not a little ſurprized when he found himſelf circumſtantially catechized about the particulars of his life, by perſons commiſſioned for that purpoſe by the emperor. He told them, that he was abſolutely ignorant of his own birth, though he had been informed, during his reſidence in Turky, that he was the baſtard of a Spaniſh grandee, and gave them a minute detail of the pilgrimage he had undergone. This information agreeing with the intelligence which the prieſt had already received, and being corroborated with the marks upon his body, and the very ſcars of the wounds which had been inflicted upon him in his infancy, the confeſſor, without farther heſitation, ſa-

luted him by the name of Count D'Alvarez, grandee of Spain, and explained the whole myſtery of his fortune.

"If he was agreeably amazed at this explanation, the caſe was otherwiſe with his wife, who thought herſelf in great danger of being abandoned by an huſband of ſuch high rank; but he immediately diſpelled her apprehenſion, by aſſuring her, that as ſhe had ſhared in his adverſity, ſhe ſhould alſo partake of his good fortune. He ſet out immediately for Vienna, to make his acknowledgments to the emperor, who favoured him with a very gracious reception, promiſed to uſe his influence, ſo that he might enjoy the honours and eſtate of his family; and in the mean time acknowledged himſelf his debtor for four hundred thouſand florins, which he had borrowed from his uncle. He threw himſelf at the feet of his auguſt protector, expreſſed the moſt grateful ſenſe of his goodneſs, and begged he might be permitted to ſettle in ſome of his imperial majeſty's dominions.

"This requeſt was immediately granted; he was allowed to purchaſe land in any part of the hereditary dominions of the houſe of Auſtria, to the amount of the ſum I have mentioned; and made choice of the country of Ratibor in Sileſia, where, in all probability, he ſtill reſides."

Peregrine had ſcarce finiſhed this narrative, when he perceived Mr. M——r ſlip ſomething into the hand of the young man with whom he had been converſing at the other end of the room, and riſe up from the table in order to take his leave. He at once underſtood the meaning of this conveyance, and longed for an opportunity to be acquainted with ſuch a rare inſtance of primitive benevolence; but the conſciouſneſs of his preſent ſituation hindered him from making any advance that might be conſtrued into forwardneſs or preſumption.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

He is surprized with the Appearance of Hatchway and Pipes, who take up their Habitation in his Neighbourhood, contrary to his Inclination and express Desire.

BEING now regularly initiated in the mysteries of the Fleet, and reconciled in some measure to the customs of the place, he began to bear the edge of reflection without wincing; and thinking it would be highly imprudent in him to defer any longer the purposes by which only he could enjoy any ease and satisfaction in his confinement, he resolved to resume his task of translating, and every week compose an occasional paper, by way of revenge upon the minister, against whom he had denounced eternal war. With this view he locked himself up in his chamber, and went to work with great eagerness and application; when he was interrupted by a ticket-porter, who, putting a letter in his hand, vanished in a moment, before he had time to peruse the contents.

Our hero, opening this billet, was not a little surprized to find a bank-note for fifty pounds, enclosed in a blank sheet of paper; and having exercised his memory and penetration on the subject of this unexpected windfal, had just concluded, that it could come from no other than the lady who had so kindly visited him a few days before, when his ears were suddenly invaded by the well-known sound of that whistle which always hung about the neck of Pipes, as a memorial of his former occupation. This tune being performed, he heard the noise of a wooden leg ascending the stairs, upon which he opened his door, and beheld his friend Hatchway, with his old ship-mate at his back.

After a cordial shake of the hand, with the usual salutation of, "What cheer, Cousin Pickle?" honest Jack seated himself without ceremony; and casting his eyes around the apartment, "Split my topstay-sail," said he, with an arch sneer, "you have got into a snug birth,

birth, couſin! Here you may ſit all weathers, without being turned out to take your watch, and no fear of the ſhip's dragging her anchor. You ha'n't much room to ſpare, 'tis true: an' I had known as how you ſtowed ſo cloſe, Tom ſhould have flung my own hammock for you, and then you might have knocked down this great lubberly hurricane houſe. But, mayhap, you turn in double, and ſo you don't chuſe to truſt yourſelf and your doxy to a clue and canvaſs."

Pickle bore his jokes with great good-humour; rallied him in his turn about the dairy-maid at the garriſon, enquiring about his friends in the country; aſked if he had been to viſit his niece; and, finally, expreſſed a deſire of knowing the cauſe of his journey to London. The lieutenant ſatisfied his curioſity in all theſe particulars; and in anſwer to the laſt queſtion obſerved, that from the information of Pipes, underſtanding he was land-locked, he had come from the country in order to tow him into the offing. "I know not how the wind ſits," ſaid he, "but if ſo be, as three thouſand pounds will bring you clear of the cape, ſay the word, and you ſhan't lie wind-bound another glaſs for want of the money."

This was an offer which few people in our hero's ſituation would have altogether refuſed; eſpecially, as he had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that, far from being a vain, unmeaning compliment, it was the genuine tribute of friendſhip, which the lieutenant would have willingly, aye, and with pleaſure, paid. Nevertheleſs, Peregrine peremptorily refuſed his aſſiſtance, though not without expreſſing himſelf in terms of acknowledgment ſuitable to the occaſion. He told him it would be time enough to make uſe of his generoſity when he ſhould find himſelf deſtitute of all other reſource. Jack employed all his rhetorick with a view of perſuading him to take this opportunity to procure his own enlargement; and finding his arguments ineffectual, inſiſted upon his accepting an immediate ſupply for his neceſſary occaſions; ſwearing, with great vehemence,

vehemence, that he would never return to the garrison unless he would put him upon the footing of any other tenant, and receive his rent accordingly.

Our young gentleman as positively swore, that he never would consider him in that light: remonstrating, that he had long ago settled the house upon him for life, as a pledge of his own esteem, as well as in conformity with the commodore's desire: and beseeching him to return to his usual avocations, protesting that if ever his situation should subject him to the necessity of borrowing from his friends, Mr. Hatchway should be the first man to whom he would apply himself for succour. To convince him that this was not the case at present, he produced the bank-note which he had received in the letter, together with his own ready-money; and mentioned some other funds, which he invented *extempore*, in order to amuse the lieutenant's concern. In the close of this expostulation, he desired Pipes to conduct Mr. Hatchway to the coffee-house, where he might entertain himself with the newspapers for half an hour; during which he would put on his cloaths, and bespeak something for dinner, that they might enjoy each other's company as long as his occasions would permit him to stay in that place.

The two sailors were no sooner gone, than he took up the pen, and wrote the following letter, in which he inclosed the bank-note to his generous benefactress.

'MADAM,

'YOUR humanity is not more ingenious than my 'suspicion. In vain you attempt to impose upon me 'by an act of generosity which no person upon earth 'but your ladyship is capable of committing. Though 'your name was not subscribed on the paper, your 'sentiments were fully displayed in the contents, 'which I must beg leave to restore, with the same 'sense of gratitude, and for the same reasons, I ex-'pressed when last I had the honour to converse with 'you upon this subject. Though I am deprived of 'my liberty by the villainy and ingratitude of man-

'kind,

'kind, I am not yet destitute of the other convenien-'cies of life: and, therefore, beg to be excused for in-'curring an unnecessary addition to that load of obli-'gation you have already laid upon, madam, your 'ladyship's most devoted, humble servant,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Having dressed himself, and repaired to the place of appointment, he dispatched this epistle by the hands of Pipes, who was ordered to leave it at her ladyship's house, without staying for an answer; and in the mean time gave directions for dinner; which he and his friend Hatchway ate very chearfully in his own apartment, after he had entertained him with a sight of all the curiosities in the place. During their repast, Jack repeated his kind offers to our adventurer, who declined them with his former obstinacy, and begged he might be no more importuned on that subject: but, if he insisted upon giving some fresh proofs of his friendship, he might have an opportunity of exhibiting it in taking Pipes under his care and protection; for nothing affected him so much as his inability to provide for such a faithful adherent.

The lieutenant desired he would give himself no trouble upon that score: he being, of his own accord, perfectly well disposed to befriend his old ship-mate, who should never want while he had a shilling to spare. But he began to drop some hints of an intention to fix his quarters in the Fleet; observing, that the air seemed to be very good in that place, and that he was tired of living in the country. What he said did not amount to a plain declaration, and therefore Peregrine did not answer it as such, though he perceived his drift; and took an opportunity of describing the inconveniencies of the place, in such a manner as he hoped would deter him from putting such an extravagant plan in execution.

This expedient, however, far from answering the end proposed, had a quite contrary effect, and furnished Hatchway with an argument against his own unwil-

lingness

ingness to quit ſuch a diſagreeable place. In all probability, Jack would have been more explicit with regard to the ſcheme he had propoſed, if the converſation had not been interrupted by the arrival of Cadwallader, who never failed in the performance of his diurnal viſit. Hatchway, conjecturing that this ſtranger might have ſome private buſineſs with his friend, quitted the apartment, on pretence of taking a turn; and meeting Pipes at the door, deſired his company to the *Bare*, by which name the open ſpace is diſtinguiſhed: where, during a courſe of perambulation, theſe two companions held a council upon Pickle: in conſequence of which it was determined, ſince he obſtinately perſiſted to refuſe their aſſiſtance, that they ſhould take lodgings in his neighbourhood, with a view of being at hand to miniſter unto his occaſions, in ſpite of his falſe delicacy, according to the emergency of his affairs.

This reſolution being taken, they conſulted the barkeeper of the coffee-houſe about lodging, and ſhe directed them to the warden: to whom the lieutenant, in his great wiſdom, repreſented himſelf as a kinſman to Peregrine, who, rather than leave that young gentleman by himſelf to the unavoidable diſcomforts of a priſon, was inclined to keep him company, till ſuch time as his affairs could be put in order. This meaſure he the more anxiouſly deſired to take, becauſe the priſoner was ſometimes ſubject to a diſordered imagination, upon which occaſion he ſtood in need of extraordinary attendance; and therefore he (the lieutenant) intreated the warden to accommodate him with a lodging for himſelf and his ſervant, for which he was ready to make any reaſonable acknowledgment. The warden, who was a ſenſible and humane man, could not help applauding his reſolution; and ſeveral rooms being at that time unoccupied, he put him immediately in poſſeſſion of a couple, which were forthwith prepared for his reception.

This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, he diſpatched

patched Pipes for his portmanteau: and returning to the coffee-house, found Peregrine, with whom he spent the remaining part of the evening. Our hero, taking it for granted that he proposed to set out for the garrison next day, wrote a memorandum of some books which he had left in that habitation, and which he now desired Jack to send up to town by the waggon, directed for Mr. Crabtree. He cautioned him against giving the least hint of his misfortune in the neighbourhood, that it might remain, as long as possible, concealed from the knowledge of his sister, (who, he knew, would afflict herself immoderately at the news;) nor reach the ears of the rest of his family, who would exult and triumph over his distress.

Hatchway listened to his injunctions with great attention, and promised to demean himself accordingly: then the discourse shifted to an agreeable recapitulation of the merry scenes they had formerly acted together; and the evening being pretty far advanced, Peregrine, with seeming reluctance, told him that the gates of the Fleet would in a few minutes be shut for the night, and that there was an absolute necessity for his withdrawing to his lodging. Jack replied, that he could not think of parting with him so soon, after such a long separation; and that he was determined to stay with him an hour or two longer, if he should be obliged to take up his lodging in the street. Pickle, rather than disoblige his guest, indulged him in his desire, and resolved to give him a share of his own bed. A pair of chickens and asparagus were bespoke for supper, at which Pipes attended with an air of internal satisfaction; and the bottle was bandied about in a jovial manner till midnight, when the lieutenant rose up to take his leave, observing, that being fatigued with riding, he was inclined to turn-in. Pipes, upon this intimation, produced a lanthorn ready lighted; and Jack, shaking his entertainer by the hand, wished him good night, and promised to visit him again betimes in the morning.

Peregrine,

Peregrine, imagining that his behaviour proceeded from the wine, which he had plentifully drank, told him, that if he was diſpoſed to ſleep, his bed was ready prepared in the room, and ordered his attendant to undreſs his maſter; upon which Mr. Hatchway gave him to underſtand, that he had no occaſion to incommode his friend, having already provided a lodging for himſelf; and the young gentleman demanding an explanation, he frankly owned what he had done, ſaying, "You gave me ſuch a diſmal account of the place, that I could not think of leaving you in it without company." Our young gentleman, who was naturally impatient of benefits, and foreſaw that this uncommon inſtance of Hatchway's friendſhip would encroach upon the plan which he had formed for his own ſubſiſtence, by engroſſing his time and attention, ſo as that he ſhould not be able to proſecute his labours, cloſeted the lieutenant next day, and demonſtrated to him the folly and ill conſequences of the ſtep he had taken. He obſerved that the world in general would look upon it as the effect of mere madneſs; and, if his relations were ſo diſpoſed, they might make it the foundation for a ſtatute of lunacy againſt him; that his abſence from the garriſon muſt be a very great detriment to his private affairs; and, laſtly, that his preſence in the Fleet would be a very great hindrance to Pickle himſelf, whoſe hope of regaining his liberty altogether depended upon his being detached from all company and interruption.

To theſe remonſtrances Jack replied, that, as to the opinion of the world, it was no more to him than a rotten net-line; and if his relations had a mind to have his upper-works condemned, he did not doubt but he ſhould be able to ſtand the ſurvey, without being declared unfit for ſervice; that he had no affairs at the garriſon, but ſuch as would keep cold; and with regard to Pickle's being interrupted by his preſence, he gave him his word, that he would never come alongſide of him, except when he ſhould give him the ſignal

for holding discourse. In conclusion, he signified his resolution to stay where he was, at all events, without making himself accountable to any person whatsoever.

Peregrine seeing him determined, desisted from any farther importunity; resolving, however, to tire him out of his plan by reserve and supercilious neglect; for he could not bear the thought of being so notoriously obliged by any person upon earth. With this view he quitted the lieutenant on some slight pretence; after having told him, that he could not have the pleasure of his company at dinner, because he was engaged with a particular club of his fellow-prisoners.

Jack was a stranger to the punctilios of behaviour, and therefore did not take this declaration amiss; but had immediate recourse to the advice of his counsellor Mr. Pipes, who proposed that he should go to the coffee-house and kitchen, and give the people to understand that he would pay for all such liquor and provisions as Mr. Pickle should order to be sent to his own lodging. This expedient was immediately practised; and as there was no credit in the place, Hatchway deposited a sum of money, by way of security to the cook and the vintner, intimating, that there was a necessity for taking that method of befriending his Cousin Peregrine, who was subject to strange whims, that rendered it impossible to serve him any other way.

In consequence of these insinuations, it was that same day rumoured about the Fleet, that Mr. Pickle was an unhappy gentleman disordered in his understanding, and that the lieutenant was his near relation, who had subjected himself to the inconvenience of living in a gaol, with the sole view of keeping a strict eye over his conduct. This report, however, did not reach the ears of our hero till the next day, when he sent one of the runners of the Fleet, who attended him, to bespeak and pay for a couple of pullets, and something else for dinner, to which he had already invited his friend Hatchway, in hopes of being able to persuade him to retire into the country, after he had undergone a

whole day's mortification in the place. The meſſenger returned with an aſſurance, that the dinner ſhould be made ready according to his directions, and reſtored the money, obſerving that his kinſman had paid for what was beſpoke.

Peregrine was equally ſurprized and diſguſted at this information, and reſolved to chide the lieutenant ſeverely for his unſeaſonable treat, which he conſidered as a thing repugnant to his reputation. Meanwhile, he diſpatched his attendant for wine to the coffee-houſe, and finding his credit bolſtered up in that place by the ſame means, was enraged at the preſumption of Jack's friendſhip. He queſtioned the valet about it with ſuch manifeſtation of diſpleaſure, that the fellow, afraid of diſobliging ſuch a good maſter, frankly communicated the ſtory which was circulated at his expence. The young gentleman was ſo much incenſed at this piece of intelligence, that he wrote a bitter expoſtulation to the lieutenant, wherein he not only retracted his invitation, but declared that he would never converſe with him while he ſhould remain within the place.

Having thus obeyed the dictates of his anger, he gave notice to the cook, that he ſhould not have occaſion for what was ordered. Repairing to the coffee-houſe, he told the landlord, that whereas he underſtood the ſtranger with the wooden leg had prepoſſeſſed him and others with ridiculous notions, tending to bring the ſanity of his intellects in queſtion; and to confirm this imputation, had, under the pretence of conſanguinity, undertaken to defray his expences; he could not help (in juſtice to himſelf) declaring, that the ſame perſon was, in reality, the madman, who had given his keepers the ſlip; that therefore he (the landlord) would not find his account in complying with his orders, and encouraging him to frequent his houſe; and that for his own part, he would never enter the door, or favour him with the leaſt trifle of his cuſtom, if ever he ſhould for the future find himſelf anticipated in his payments by that unhappy lunatick.

The vintner was confounded at this retorted charge; and after much perplexity and deliberation, concluded that both parties were distracted; the stranger in paying a man's debts against his will, and Pickle, in being offended at such forwardness of friendship.

CHAP. XV.

These Associates commit an Assault upon Crabtree, for which they are banished from the Fleet. Peregrine begins to feel the Effects of Confinement.

OUR adventurer having dined at an ordinary, and in the afternoon retired to his own apartment as usual, with his friend Cadwallader; Hatchway and his associate, after they had been obliged to discuss the provision for which they had paid, renewed their conference upon the old subject. Pipes giving his mess-mate to understand, that Peregrine's chief confidante was the old deaf batchelor, whom he had seen at his lodging the preceding day, Mr. Hatchway in his great penetration discovered, that the young gentleman's obstinacy proceeded from the advice of the misanthrope, whom for that reason it was their business to chastise. Pipes entered into this opinion the more willingly, as he had all along believed the senior to be a sort of wizard, or some caco-demon, whom it was not very creditable to be acquainted with. Indeed, he had been inspired with this notion by the insinuations of Hadgi, who had formerly dropped some hints touching Crabtree's profound knowledge in the magick art; mentioning, in particular, his being possessed of the philosopher's stone; an assertion to which Tom had given implicit credit until his master was sent to prison for debt, when he could no longer suppose Cadwallader lord of such a valuable secret, or else he would have certainly procured the enlargement of his most intimate friend.

With these sentiments he espoused the resentment of Hatchway. They determined to seize the supposed conjuror with the first opportunity, on his return from

his visit to Peregrine; and, without hesitation, exercise upon him the discipline of the pump. This plan they would have executed that same evening, had not the misanthrope luckily withdrawn himself by accident before it was dark, and even before they had intelligence of his return. But next day they kept themselves upon the watch till he appeared; and Pipes lifting his hat as Crabtree passed, "O damn ye, old Dunny!" said he, "you and I must grapple by and bye; and a'gad I shall lie so near your quarter, that your ear-ports will let in the sound, tho'f they are double caulked with oakum."

The misanthrope's ears were not quite so fast closed, but that they received this intimation; which, though delivered in terms that he did not well understand, had such an effect upon his apprehension, that he signified his doubts to Peregrine, observing, that he did not much like the looks of that same ruffian with the wooden leg. Pickle assured him he had nothing to fear from the two sailors, who could have no cause of resentment against him; or if they had, would not venture to take any step, which they knew must block up all the avenues to that reconcilement, about which they were so anxious; and, moreover, give such offence to the governor of the place, as would infallibly induce him to expel them both from his territories.

Notwithstanding this assurance, the young gentleman was not so confident of the lieutenant's discretion, as to believe that Crabtree's fears were altogether without foundation: he forthwith conjectured that Jack had taken umbrage at an intimacy from which he found himself excluded, and imputed his disgrace to the insinuations of Cadwallader, whom in all likelihood he intended to punish for his supposed advice; he knew his friend could sustain no great damage from the lieutenant's resentment, in a place which he could immediately alarm with his cries: and therefore wished he might fall into the snare, because it would furnish him with a pretence of complaint; in consequence of

which, the ſailors would be obliged to ſhift their quarters, ſo as that he ſhould be rid of their company, in which he at preſent could find no enjoyment.

Every thing happened as he had foreſeen; the miſanthrope, in his retreat from Peregrine's chamber, was aſſaulted by Hatchway and his aſſociate, who ſeized him by the collar without ceremony, and began to drag him towards the pump, at which they would have certainly complimented him with a very diſagreeable bath, had he not exalted his voice in ſuch a manner, as in a moment brought a number of the inhabitants, and Pickle himſelf, to his aid. The aſſailants would have perſiſted in their deſign, had the oppoſition been ſuch as they could have faced with any poſſibility of ſucceſs: nor did they quit their prey before a dozen, at leaſt, had come to his reſcue, and Peregrine, with a menacing aſpect and air of authority, commanded his old valet to withdraw: then they thought proper to ſheer off, and betake themſelves to cloſe quarters, while our hero accompanied the affrighted Cadwallader to the gate, and exhibited to the warden a formal complaint againſt the rioters, upon whom he retorted the charge of lunacy, which was ſupported by the evidence of twenty perſons, who had been eye-witneſſes of the outrage committed againſt the old gentleman.

The governor, in conſequence of this information, ſent a meſſage to Mr. Hatchway, warning him to move his lodging next day, on pain of being expelled. The lieutenant contumaciouſly refuſing to comply with this intimation, was in the morning, while he amuſed himſelf in walking upon the *Bare*, ſuddenly ſurrounded by the conſtables of the court, who took him and his adherents priſoners, before they were aware, and delivered them into the hands of the turnkeys, by whom they were immediately diſmiſſed, and their baggage conveyed to the ſide of the ditch.

This expulſion was not performed without an obſtinate oppoſition on the part of the delinquents; who, had they not been ſurprized, would have ſet the whole

Fleet

Fleet at defiance, and in all probability have acted divers tragedies before they could have been overpowered. Things being circumſtanced as they were, the lieutenant did not part with his conductor without tweaking his noſe by way of farewel; and Pipes, in imitation of ſuch a laudable example, communicated a token of remembrance, in an application to the ſole eye of his attendant, who ſcorning to be outdone in this kind of courteſy, returned the compliment with ſuch good-will, that Tom's organ performed the office of a multiplying glaſs. Theſe were mutual hints for ſtripping; and accordingly each was naked from the waiſt upwards in a trice. A ring of butchers from the market was immediately formed; a couple of the reverend Flamens, who, in morning gowns, ply for marriages in that quarter of the town, conſtituted themſelves ſeconds and umpires of the approaching conteſt, and the battle began without farther preparation. The combatants were, in point of ſtrength and agility, pretty equally matched; but the gaoler had been regularly trained to the art of bruiſing; he had more than once ſignalized himſelf in publick, by his proweſs and ſkill in this exerciſe, and loſt one eye upon the ſtage in the courſe of his exploits. This was a misfortune of which Pipes did not fail to take the advantage: he had already ſuſtained ſeveral hard knocks upon his temples and jaws, and found it impracticable to ſmite his antagoniſt upon the victualling-office, ſo dextrouſly was it defended againſt aſſault. He then changed his battery, and being ambi-dexter, raiſed ſuch a clatter upon the turnkey's blind-ſide, that this hero believing him left-handed, converted his attention that way, and oppoſed the unenlightened ſide of his face to the right-hand of Pipes, which being thus unprovided againſt, ſlily beſtowed upon him a peg under the fifth rib, that in an inſtant laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement, at the feet of his conqueror. Pipes was congratulated upon his victory, not only by his friend Hatchway, but alſo by all the by-ſtanders, particularly the

prieſt

prieſt who had eſpouſed his cauſe, and now invited the ſtrangers to his lodgings in a neighbouring ale-houſe, where they were entertained ſo much to their liking, that they determined to ſeek no other habitation while they ſhould continue in town: and notwithſtanding the diſgrace and diſcouragement they had met with, in their endeavours to ſerve our adventurer, they were ſtill reſolved to perſevere in their good offices, or, in the vulgar phraſe, to ſee him out.

While they ſettled themſelves in this manner, and acquired familiar connections round all the purlieus of the ditch, Peregrine found himſelf deprived of the company of Cadwallader, who ſignified by letter, that he did not chuſe to hazard his perſon again in viſiting him, while ſuch aſſaſſins occupied the avenues through which he muſt paſs; for he had been at pains to enquire into the motions of the ſeamen, and informed himſelf exactly of the harbour in which they were moored.

Our hero had been ſo much accuſtomed to the converſation of Crabtree, which was altogether ſuitable to the ſingularity of his own diſpoſition, that he could very ill afford to be debarred of it at this juncture, when almoſt every other ſource of enjoyment was ſtopped. He was, however, obliged to ſubmit to the hardſhips of his ſituation; and as the characters of his fellow-priſoners did not at all improve upon him, he was compelled to ſeek for ſatisfaction within himſelf. Not but that he had an opportunity of converſing with ſome people, who neither wanted ſenſe, nor were deficient in point of principle; yet there appeared in the behaviour of them all, without exception, a certain want of decorum, a ſqualor of ſentiment, a ſort of gaoliſh caſt contracted in the courſe of confinement, which diſguſted the delicacy of our hero's obſervation. He therefore detached himſelf from their parties as much as he could, without giving offence to thoſe among whom he was obliged to live, and reſumed his labours with incredible eagerneſs and perſeverance, his

ſpirits

ſpirits being ſupported by ſome ſevere Philippics, which he occaſionally publiſhed againſt the author of his misfortune.

Nor was his humanity unemployed in the vacations of his revenge: a man muſt be void of all ſympathy and compaſſion, who can reſide among ſo many miſerable objects, without feeling an inclination to relieve their diſtreſs. Every day almoſt preſented to his view ſuch lamentable ſcenes, as were moſt likely to attract his notice, and engage his benevolence. Reverſes of fortune, attended with the moſt deplorable circumſtances of domeſtick woe, were continually intruding upon his acquaintance; his ears were invaded with the cries of the hapleſs wife, who, from the enjoyment of affluence and pleaſure, was forced to follow her huſband to this abode of wretchedneſs and want; his eyes were every minute aſſailed with the naked and meagre appearance of hunger and cold; and his fancy teemed with a thouſand aggravations of their miſery.

Thus ſituated, his purſe was never ſhut while his heart remained open. Without reflecting upon the ſlenderneſs of his ſtore, he exerciſed his charity to all the children of diſtreſs, and acquired a popularity, which, though pleaſing, was far from being profitable. In ſhort, his bounty kept no pace with his circumſtances, and in a little time he was utterly exhauſted. He had recourſe to his bookſeller, from whom, with great difficulty, he obtained a ſmall reinforcement; and immediately relapſed into the ſame want of retention. He was conſcious of his infirmity, and found it incurable: he foreſaw that by his own induſtry he ſhould never be able to defray the expence of theſe occaſions; and this reflection ſunk deep into his mind. The approbation of the publick, which he had earned or might acquire, like a cordial often repeated, began to loſe its effect upon his imagination: his health ſuffered by his ſedentary life and auſtere application; his eye-ſight failed; his appetite forſook him; his ſpirits decayed; ſo that he became melancholy, liſtleſs, and altogether incapable

incapable of profecuting the only means he had left for his fubfiftence; and (what did not at all contribute to the alleviation of thefe particulars) he was given to underftand by his lawyer, that he had loft his caufe, and was condemned in cofts. Even this was not the moft mortifying piece of intelligence he received; he at the fame time learned that his bookfeller was bankrupt, and his friend Crabtree at the point of death.

Thefe were comfortable confiderations to a youth of Peregrine's difpofition; which was fo capricious, that the more his mifery increafed, the more haughty and inflexible he became. Rather than be beholden to Hatchway, who ftill hovered about the gate, eager for an opportunity to affift him, he chofe to undergo the want of almoft every convenience of life, and actually pledged his wearing apparel to an Irifh pawnbroker in the Fleet, for money to purchafe thofe things without which he muft have abfolutely perifhed. He was gradually irritated by his misfortunes into a rancorous refentment againft mankind in general, and his heart fo alienated from the enjoyments of life, that he did not care how foon he quitted his miferable exiftence. Though he had fhocking examples of the viciffitudes of fortune continually before his eyes, he could never be reconciled to the idea of living like his fellow-fufferers, in the moft abject degree of dependance. If he refufed to accept of favours from his own allies and intimate friends, whom he had formerly obliged, it is not to be fuppofed that he would liften to propofals of that kind from any of his fellow prifoners, with whom he had contracted acquaintance: he was even more cautious than ever of incurring obligations; he now fhunned his former mefsmates, in order to avoid difagreeable tenders of friendfhip. Imagining that he perceived an inclination in the clergyman to learn the ftate of his finances, he difcouraged and declined the explanation, and at length fecluded himfelf from all fociety.

CHAP. XVI.

He receives an unexpected Visit; and the Clouds of Misfortune begin to separate.

WHILE he pined in this forlorn condition, with an equal abhorrence of the world and himſelf, Captain Gauntlet arrived in town, in order to employ his intereſt for promotion in the army; and in conſequence of his wife's particular deſire, made it his buſineſs to enquire for Peregrine, to whom he longed to be reconciled, even though at the expence of a ſlight ſubmiſſion. But he could hear no tidings of him at the place to which he was directed; and, on the ſuppoſition that our hero had gone to reſide in the country, applied himſelf to his own buſineſs, with intention to renew his enquiries after that affair ſhould be tranſacted. He communicated his demands to his ſuppoſed patron, who had aſſumed the merit of making him a captain, and been gratified with a valuable preſent on that conſideration; and was cajoled with hopes of ſucceeding in his preſent aim by the ſame intereſt.

Meanwhile he became acquainted with one of the clerks belonging to the war-office, whoſe advice and aſſiſtance, he was told, would be a furtherance to his ſcheme. As he had occaſion to diſcourſe with this gentleman upon the circumſtances of his expectation, he learned that the nobleman, upon whom he depended, was a perſon of no conſequence in the ſtate, and altogether incapable of aſſiſting him in his advancement. At the ſame time, his counſellor expreſſed his ſurprize that Captain Gauntlet did not rather intereſt in his cauſe the noble peer, to whoſe good offices he owed his laſt commiſſion.

This remark introduced an explanation, by which Godfrey diſcovered, to his infinite aſtoniſhment, the miſtake in which he had continued ſo long with regard to his patron; though he could not divine the motive which induced a nobleman, with whom he had no acquaintance or connection, to interpoſe his influence in

his

his behalf. Whatſoever that might be, he thought it was his duty to make his acknowledgment; and for that purpoſe went next morning to his houſe, where he was politely received, and given to underſtand, that Mr. Pickle was the perſon to whoſe friendſhip he was indebted for his laſt promotion.

Inexpreſſible were the tranſports of gratitude, affection, and remorſe, that took poſſeſſion of the ſoul of Gauntlet when this myſtery was unfolded. "Good Heaven!" cried he, lifting up his hands, "have I lived ſo long in a ſtate of animoſity with my benefactor? I intended to have reconciled myſelf to him, at any rate, before I was ſenſible of this obligation; but now I ſhall not enjoy a moment's quiet until I have an opportunity of expreſſing to him my ſenſe of his heroick friendſhip. I preſume, from the nature of the favour conferred upon him in my behalf, that Mr. Pickle is well known to your lordſhip: and I ſhould think myſelf extremely happy, if you could inform me in what part of the country he is to be found: for the perſon with whom he lodged ſome time ago could give me no intelligence of his motion."

The nobleman, touched with this inſtance of generous ſelf-denial in Peregrine, as well as with the ſenſibility of his friend, lamented the unhappineſs of our hero, while he gave Gauntlet to underſtand that he had been long diſordered in his intellects, in conſequence of having ſquandered away his fortune; and that his creditors had thrown him into the Fleet-priſon: but whether he ſtill continued in that confinement, or was releaſed from his misfortunes by death, his lordſhip did not know, becauſe he had never enquired.

Godfrey no ſooner received this intimation, than (his blood boiling with grief and impatience) he craved pardon for his abrupt departure: then quitting his informer on the inſtant, re-embarked in his hackney-coach, and ordered himſelf to be conveyed directly to the Fleet. As the vehicle proceeded along one ſide of the market, he was ſurprized with the appearance of

Hatchway

Hatchway and Pipes, who ſtood cheapening cauliflowers at a green-ſtall, their heads being caſed in worſted night-caps, half covered with their hats, and a ſhort tobacco-pipe in the mouth of each. He was rejoiced at ſight of the two ſeamen, which he took for an happy omen of finding his friend; and ordering the coachman to ſtop the carriage, called to the lieutenant by his name. Jack replied with an *Hilloah!* looked behind him, and recognizing the face of his old acquaintance, ran up to the coach with great eagerneſs. Shaking the captain heartily by the hand, "Odd's heart!" ſaid he, "I am glad thou haſt fallen in with us; we ſhall now be able to find the trim of the veſſel, and lay her about on t'other tack. For my own part, I have had many a comfort in my time, that is, in the way of good fellowſhip, and I always made ſhift to ware 'em at one time or another: but this headſtrong toad will neither obey the helm nor the ſheet; and, for aught I know, will founder where a' lies at anchor."

Gauntlet, who conceived part of his meaning, alighted immediately; and being conducted to the ſailor's lodging, was informed of every thing that had paſſed between the lieutenant and Pickle. He, in his turn, communicated to Jack the diſcovery which he had made with regard to his commiſſion; at which the other gave no ſigns of ſurprize; but taking the pipe from his mouth, "Why, look ye, captain," ſaid he, "that's not the only good turn you have owed him. That ſame money you received from the Commodore as an old debt was all a ſham, contrived by Pickle for your ſervice; but a' wool drive under his bare poles, without ſails and rigging, or a meſs of proviſion on board, rather than take the ſame aſſiſtance from another man."

Godfrey was not only amazed, but chagrined at the knowledge of this anecdote; which gave umbrage to his pride, while it ſtimulated his deſire of doing ſomething in return for the obligation. He enquired into the preſent circumſtances of the priſoner; and under-

ſtanding that he was indiſpoſed, and but indifferently provided with the common neceſſaries of life, though ſtill deaf to all offers of aſſiſtance, began to be extremely concerned at the account of his ſavage obſtinacy and pride, which would, he feared, exclude him from the privilege of relieving him in his diſtreſs. However, he reſolved to leave no expedient untried, that might have any tendency to ſurmount ſuch deſtructive prejudice; and, entering the gaol, was directed to the apartment of the wretched priſoner. He knocked ſoftly at the door, and when it was opened, ſtarted back with horror and aſtoniſhment: the figure that preſented itſelf to his view, was the remains of his once happy friend; but ſo miſerably altered and diſguiſed, that his features were ſcarce cognizable. The florid, the ſprightly, the gay, the elevated youth, was now metamorphoſed into a wan, dejected, meagre, ſqualid ſpectre; the hollow-eyed repreſentative of diſtemper, indigence, and deſpair: yet his eyes retained a certain ferocity, which threw a diſmal gleam athwart the cloudineſs of his aſpect; and he, in ſilence, viewed his old companion with a look betokening confuſion and diſdain. As for Gauntlet, he could not, without emotion, behold ſuch a woeful reverſe of fate, in a perſon for whom he entertained the nobleſt ſentiments of friendſhip, gratitude, and eſteem: his ſorrow was at firſt too big for utterance, and he ſhed a flood of tears before he could pronounce one word.

Peregrine, in ſpite of his miſanthropy, could not help being affected with this uncommon teſtimony of regard; but he ſtrove to ſtifle his ſenſations: his brows contracted themſelves into a ſevere frown; his eyes kindled into the appearance of live coals; he waved with his hand, in ſignal for Godfrey to be gone, and leave ſuch a wretch as him to the miſeries of his fate; and finding nature too ſtrong to be ſuppreſſed, uttered a deep groan and wept aloud.

The ſoldier, ſeeing him thus melted, unable to reſtrain the ſtrong impulſe of his affection, ſprung towards,

wards, and claſping him in his arms, "My deareſt friend, and beſt benefactor," ſaid he, "I am come hither to humble myſelf for the offence I was ſo unhappy as to give you at our laſt parting; to beg a reconciliation, to thank you for the eaſe and affluence I have enjoyed through your means, and to reſcue you, in ſpite of yourſelf, from this melancholy ſituation, of which but an hour ago I was utterly ignorant. Do not deny me the ſatisfaction of acquitting myſelf in point of duty and obligation. You muſt certainly have had ſome regard for a perſon, in whoſe favour you have exerted yourſelf ſo much; and if any part of that eſteem remains, you will not refuſe him an opportunity of approving himſelf in ſome meaſure worthy of it. Let me not ſuffer the moſt mortifying of all repulſes, that of ſlighted friendſhip; but kindly ſacrifice your friendſhip and inflexibility to the requeſt of one, who is at all times ready to ſacrifice his life for your honour and advantage. If you will not yield to my intreaties, have ſome regard to the wiſhes of my Sophy, who laid me under the ſtrongeſt injunctions to ſolicit your forgiveneſs, even before ſhe knew how much I was indebted to your generoſity; or, if that conſideration ſhould be of no weight, I hope you will relax a little for the ſake of poor Emilia, whoſe reſentment hath been long ſubdued by her affection, and who now droops in ſecret at your neglect."

Every word of this addreſs, delivered in the moſt pathetic manner, made an impreſſion upon the mind of Peregrine: he was affected with the ſubmiſſion of his friend, who, in reality, had given him no juſt cauſe to complain. He knew that no ordinary motive had ſwayed him to a condeſcenſion, ſo extraordinary in a man of his punctilious temper: he conſidered it, therefore, as the genuine effect of eager gratitude and diſintereſted love, and his heart began to relent accordingly. When he heard himſelf conjured in the name of the gentle Sophy, his obſtinacy was quite overcome; and when Emilia was recalled to his remem-

 brance,

brance, his whole frame underwent a violent agitation. He took his friend by the hand, with a softened look, and as soon as he recovered the faculty of speech, which had been overpowered in the conflict of passions that transported him, protested, that he retained no vestige of animosity, but considered him in the light of an affectionate comrade, the ties of whose friendship adversity could not unbind. He mentioned Sophy in the most respectful terms; spoke of Emilia with the most reverential awe, as the object of his inviolable love and veneration; but disclaimed all hope of ever more attracting her regard; and excused himself from profiting by Godfrey's kind intention; declaring, with a resolute air, that he had broke off all connection with mankind, and that he impatiently longed for the hour of his dissolution, which, if it should not soon arrive in the course of nature, he was resolved to hasten with his own hands, rather than be exposed to the contempt, and more intolerable pity, of a rascally world.

Gauntlet argued against this frantic determination with all the vehemence of expostulating friendship; but his remonstrances did not produce the desired effect upon our desperate hero, who calmy refuted all his arguments, and asserted the rectitude of his design, from the pretended maxims of reason and true philosophy.

While this dispute was carried on with eagerness on one side, and deliberation on the other, a letter was brought to Peregrine, who threw it carelessly aside unopened, though the superscription was in an hand-writing to which he was a stranger: and, in all probability, the contents would never have been perused, had not Gauntlet insisted upon his waving all ceremony, and reading it forthwith. Thus solicited, Pickle unsealed the billet, which, to his no small surprize, contained the following intimation.

'MR. P. PICKLE,

'SIR,

'THIS comes to inform you, that after many dangers and disappointments, I am, by the blessing of 'God,

'God, safely arrived in the Downs, on board of the 'Gomberoon Indiaman, having made a tolerable voy-'age; by which I hope I shall be enabled to repay, 'with interest, the seven hundred pounds which I bor-'rowed of you before my departure from England. I 'take this opportunity of writing by our purser, who 'goes express with dispatches for the company, that 'you may have this satisfactory notice as soon as pos-'sible, relating to one whom I suppose you have long 'given over as lost. I have inclosed it in a letter to 'my broker, who, I hope, knows your address, and 'will forward it accordingly: and I am, with respect, 'your most humble servant,

'BENJAMIN CHINTZ.'

He had no sooner taken a cursory view of this agreeable epistle, than his countenance cleared up, and reaching it to his friend, with a smile, "There," said he, "is a more convincing argument on your side of the question, than all the casuists in the universe can advance." Gauntlet, wondering at this observation, took the paper, and casting his eyes greedily upon the contents, congratulated him upon the receipt of it with extravagant demonstrations of joy: "Not on account of the sum," said he "which, upon my honour, I would with pleasure pay three times over for your convenience and satisfaction; but because it seems to have reconciled you to life, and disposed your mind for re-enjoying the comforts of society."

The instantaneous effect which this unexpected smile of fortune produced in the appearance of our adventurer, is altogether inconceivable: it plumped up his cheeks in a moment, unbended and enlightened every feature of his face; elevated his head, which had begun to sink, as it were, between his shoulders; and from a squeaking, dispirited tone, swelled up his voice to a clear, manly accent. Godfrey, taking advantage of this favourable change, began to regale him with prospects of future success: he reminded him of his youth and qualifications, which were certainly designed

for better days than thoſe he had as yet ſeen; he pointed out various paths, by which he might arrive at wealth and reputation; he importuned him to accept of a ſum for his immediate occaſions; and earneſtly begged, that he would allow him to diſcharge the debt for which he was confined; obſerving, that Sophy's fortune had enabled him to exhibit that proof of his gratitude, without any detriment to his affairs; and proteſting that he ſhould not believe himſelf in poſſeſſion of Mr. Pickle's eſteem, unleſs he was permitted to make ſome ſuch return of good-will to the man, who had not only raiſed him from indigence and ſcorn to competence and reputable rank, but alſo impowered him to obtain the poſſeſſion of an excellent woman, who had filled up the meaſure of his felicity.

Peregrine declared himſelf already overpaid for all his good offices by the pleaſure he enjoyed in employing them, and the happy effects they had produced, in the mutual ſatisfaction of two perſons ſo dear to his affection; and aſſured his friend, that one time or other he would ſet his conſcience at eaſe, and remove the ſcruples of his honour, by having recourſe to his aſſiſtance: but, at preſent, he could not make uſe of his friendſhip, without giving juſt cauſe of offence to honeſt Hatchway, who was prior to him in point of ſolicitation, and had manifeſted his attachment with ſurprizing obſtinacy and perſeverance.

CHAP. XVII.

Peregrine reconciles himſelf to the Lieutenant, and renews his Connection with Society. Divers Plans are projected in his Behalf, and he has Occaſion to exhibit a remarkable Proof of Self-Denial.

THE captain, with reluctance, yielded the preference in this particular to Jack, who was immediately invited to a conference, by a note ſubſcribed with Pickle's own hand. He was found at the priſon-gate waiting for Gauntlet, to know the iſſue of his negociation. He no ſooner received this ſummons, than he

ſet

ſet all his ſails, and made the beſt of his way to his friend's apartment; being admitted by the turnkey, in conſequence of Peregrine's requeſt, communicated by the meſſenger who carried the billet. Pipes followed cloſe in the wake of his ſhipmate; and, in a few minutes after the note had been diſpatched, Peregrine and Gauntlet heard the ſound of the ſtump aſcending the wooden ſtair-caſe with ſuch velocity, that they at firſt miſtook it for the application of drum-ſticks to the head of an empty barrel. This uncommon ſpeed, however, was attended with a misfortune; he chanced to overlook a ſmall defect in one of the ſteps, and his prop plunging into a hole, he fell backwards, to the imminent danger of his life. Tom was luckily at his back, and ſuſtained him in his arms, ſo as that he eſcaped without any other damage than the loſs of his wooden leg, which was ſnapped in the middle by the weight of his body in falling; and ſuch was his impatience, that he would not give himſelf the trouble to diſengage the fractured member. Unbuckling the whole equipage in a trice, he left it ſticking in the crevice, ſaying a rotten cable was not worth heaving up; and, in this natural ſtate of mutilation hopped into the room with infinite expedition.

Peregrine taking him cordially by the hand, ſeated him upon one ſide of his bed; and after having made an apology for that reſerve, of which he had ſo juſtly complained, aſked, if he could conveniently accommodate him with the loan of twenty guineas. The lieutenant, without opening his mouth, pulled out his purſe; and Pipes, who overheard the demand, applying the whiſtle to his lips, performed a loud overture in token of his joy. Matters being thus brought to an accommodation, our hero told the captain, that he ſhould be glad of his company at dinner, with their common friend Hatchway, if he would in the mean time leave him to the miniſtry of Pipes; and the ſoldier went away for the preſent, in order to pay a ſhort viſit to his uncle,

uncle, who, at that time, languished in a declining ſtate of health, promiſing to return at the appointed hour.

The lieutenant, having ſurveyed the diſmal appearance of his friend, could not help being moved at the ſpectacle, and began to upbraid him with his obſtinate pride, which he ſwore was no better than ſelf-murder. But the young gentleman interrupted him in the courſe of his moralizing, by telling him he had reaſons for his conduct, which perhaps he ſhould impart in due ſeaſon; but at preſent his deſign was to alter that plan of behaviour, and make himſelf ſome amends for the miſery he had undergone. He accordingly ſent Pipes to redeem his cloaths from the pawnbroker's wardrobe, and beſpeak ſomething comfortable for dinner. When Godfrey came back, he was very agreeably ſurprized to ſee ſuch a favourable alteration in his externals; for, by the aſſiſtance of his valet, he had purified himſelf from the dregs of his diſtreſs, and now appeared in a decent ſuit, with clean linen, while his face was diſencumbered of the hair that overſhadowed it, and his apartment prepared for the reception of company.

They enjoyed their meal with great ſatisfaction, entertaining one another with a recapitulation of their former adventures at the garriſon. In the afternoon, Gautlet taking his leave, in order to write a letter to his ſiſter, at the deſire of his uncle, who finding his end approaching, wanted to ſee her without loſs of time, Peregrine made his appearance on the *Bare*, and was complimented on his coming abroad again, not only by his old meſs-mates, who had not ſeen him for many weeks, but by a number of thoſe objects whom his liberality had fed before his funds were exhauſted. Hatchway was, by his intereſt with the warden, put in poſſeſſion of his former quarters, and Pipes diſpatched to make enquiry about Crabtree at his former lodging, where he learned that the miſanthrope, after a very ſevere fit of illneſs, was removed to Kenſington Gravel-pits, for the convenience of breathing a purer air than that of London.

In

In consequence of this information, Peregrine, who knew the narrowness of the old gentleman's fortune, next day desired his friend Gauntlet to take the trouble of visiting him in his name, with a letter, in which he expressed great concern for his indisposition, gave him notice of the fortunate intelligence he had received from the Downs, and conjured him to make use of his purse, if he was in the least hampered in his circumstances. The captain took coach immediately, and set out for the place, according to the direction which Pipes had procured.

Cadwallader having seen him at Bath, knew him again at first sight; and though reduced to a skeleton, believed himself in such a fair way of doing well, that he would have accompanied him to the Fleet immediately, had not he been restrained by his nurse, who was, by his physician invested with full authority to dispute and oppose his will in every thing that she should think prejudicial to his health; for he was considered, by those who had the care of him, as an old humourist, not a little distempered in his brain. He enquired particularly about the sailors, who (he said) had deterred him from carrying on his usual correspondence with Pickle, and been the immediate cause of his indisposition, by terrifying him into a fever. Understanding that the breach between Pickle and Hatchway was happily cemented, and that he was no longer in any danger from the lieutenant's resentment, he promised to be at the Fleet with the first convenient opportunity; and, in the mean time, wrote an answer to Peregrine's letter, importing that he was obliged to him for his offer, but had not the least occasion for his assistance.

In a few days our adventurer recovered his vigour, complexion, and vivacity; he mingled again in the diversions and parties of the place; and he received in a little time, the money he had lent upon bottomry, which, together with the interest, amounted to upwards of eleven hundred pounds. The possession of this sum, while it buoyed up his spirits, involved him in perplexity.

plexity. Sometimes he thought it was incumbent upon him, as a man of honour, to employ the greateſt part of it in diminiſhing the debt for which he ſuffered; on the other hand, he conſidered that obligation effaced, by the treacherous behaviour of his creditor who had injured him to ten times the value of the ſum: and in theſe ſentiments, entertained thoughts of attempting his eſcape from priſon, with a view of conveying himſelf, with the ſhipwreck of his fortune, to another country, in which he might uſe it to better advantage.

Both ſuggeſtions were attended with ſuch doubts and difficulties, that he heſitated between them, and for the preſent laid out a thouſand pounds in ſtock, the intereſt of which, together with the fruits of his own induſtry, he hoped, would ſupport him above want in his confinement, until ſomething ſhould occur that would point out the expediency of ſome other determination. Gauntlet ſtill inſiſted upon having the honour of obtaining his liberty, at the expence of taking up his notes to Gleanum, and exhorted him to purchaſe a commiſſion with part of the money which he had retrieved. The lieutenant affirmed, that it was his privilege to procure the releaſe of his couſin Pickle, becauſe he enjoyed a very handſome ſum by his aunt, which of right belonged to the young gentleman, to whom he was moreover indebted for the uſe of his furniture, and for the very houſe that ſtood over his head; and that, although he had already made a will in his favour, he ſhould never be ſatisfied, nor eaſy in his mind, ſo long as he remained deprived of his liberty, and wanted any of the conveniences of life.

Cadwallader, who by this time aſſiſted at their councils, and was beſt acquainted with the peculiarity and unbending diſpoſition of the youth, propoſed, that ſeeing he was ſo averſe to obligations, Mr. Hatchway ſhould purchaſe of him the garriſon with its appendages, which, at a moderate price, would ſell for more money than would be ſufficient to diſcharge his debts; that, if the ſervile ſubordination of the army did not

ſuit

ſuit his inclinations, he might with his reverſion buy a comfortable annuity, and retire with him to the country, where he might live abſolutely independent, and entertain himſelf, as uſual, with the ridiculous characters of mankind.

This plan was to Pickle leſs diſagreeable than any other project which had as yet been ſuggeſted; and the lieutenant declared himſelf ready to execute his part of it without delay; but the ſoldier was mortified at the thoughts of ſeeing his aſſiſtance unneceſſary, and eagerly objected to the retirement, as a ſcheme that would blaſt the faireſt promiſes of fame and fortune, and bury his youth and talents in ſolitude and obſcurity. This earneſt oppoſition on the part of Gauntlet, hindered our adventurer from forming any immediate reſolution; which was alſo retarded by his unwillingneſs to part with the garriſon upon any terms, becauſe he looked upon it as a part of his inheritance, which he could not diſpoſe of without committing an inſult upon the memory of the deceaſed Commodore.

CHAP. XVIII.

He is engaged in a very extrordinary Correſpondence, which is interrupted by a very unexpected Event.

WHILE this affair was in agitation, the captain told him, in the courſe of converſation, that Emilia was arrived in town, and had enquired about Mr. Pickle with ſuch an eagerneſs of concern, as ſeemed to proclaim that ſhe was in ſome meaſure informed of his misfortune: he therefore deſired to know if he might be allowed to make her acquainted with his ſituation, provided he ſhould be again importuned by her on that ſubject, which he had at firſt induſtriouſly waved.

This proof, or rather preſumption, of her ſympathizing regard, did not fail to operate powerfully upon the boſom of Peregrine, which was immediately filled with thoſe tumults which love, ill ſtifled, frequently excites. He obſerved, that his diſgrace was ſuch as could not be effectually concealed; therefore he ſaw no

reaſon

reaſon for depriving himſelf of Emilia's compaſſion, ſince he was for ever excluded from her affection; and deſired Godfrey to preſent to his ſiſter the lowly reſpects of a deſpairing lover.

But, notwithſtanding his declaration of deſpondence on this head, his imagination involuntarily teemed with more agreeable ideas: the propoſal of Crabtree had taken root in his reflection, and he could not help forming plans of paſtoral felicity, in the arms of the lovely Emilia, remote from thoſe pompous ſcenes which he now deteſted and deſpiſed. He amuſed his fancy with the proſpect of being able to ſupport her in a ſtate of independency, by means of the ſlender annuity which it was in his power to purchaſe, together with the fruits of thoſe endeavours which would profitably employ his vacant hours; and foreſaw proviſion for his growing family in the friendſhip of the lieutenant, who had already conſtituted him his heir. He even parcelled out his hours among the neceſſary cares of the world, the pleaſures of domeſtic bliſs, and the enjoyments of a country life; and ſpent the night in ideal parties with his charming bride, ſometimes walking by the ſedgy bank of ſome tranſparent ſtream, ſometimes pruning the luxuriant vine, and ſometimes ſitting in ſocial converſe with her in a ſhady grove of his own planting.

Theſe, however, were no more than the ſhadowy phantoms of imagination, which he well knew would never be realized: not that he believed ſuch happineſs unattainable by a perſon in his circumſtances; but becauſe he would not ſtoop to propoſe a ſcheme, which might, in any ſhape, ſeem to interfere with the intereſt of Emilia, or ſubject himſelf to a repulſe from that young lady, who had rejected his addreſſes in the zenith of his fortune.

While he diverted himſelf with theſe agreeable reveries, an unexpected event intervened, in which ſhe and her brother were deeply intereſted. The uncle was tapped for the dropſy, and died in a few days after the operation; having bequeathed, in his will, five thouſand

ſand pounds to his nephew, and twice that ſum to his niece, who had always enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his favour.

If our adventurer, before this occurrence, looked upon his love for Emilia as a paſſion which it was neceſſary, at any rate, to conquer or ſuppreſs; he now conſidered her acceſſion of fortune as a circumſtance which confirmed that neceſſity, and reſolved to diſcourage every thought on that ſubject, which ſhould tend to the propagation of hope. One day, in the midſt of a converſation calculated for the purpoſe, Godfrey put into his hand a letter directed to Mr. Pickle, in the hand-writing of Emilia; which the youth no ſooner recognized, than his cheeks were covered with a crimſon dye, and he began to tremble with violent agitation: for he at once gueſſed the import of the billet, which he kiſſed with great reverence and devotion, and was not at all ſuprized when he read the following words.

'SIR,

'I Have performed a ſufficient ſacrifice to my reputation, in retaining hitherto the appearance of that 'reſentment which I had long ago diſmiſſed; and as 'the late favourable change in my ſituation impowers 'me to avow my genuine ſentiments, without fear of 'cenſure, or ſuſpicion of mercenary deſign, I take 'this opportunity to aſſure you, that if I ſtill maintain 'that place in your heart, which I was vain enough to 'think I once poſſeſſed, I am willing to make the firſt 'advances to an accommodation; and have actually 'furniſhed my brother with full powers to conclude it 'in the name of your appeaſed 'EMILIA.'

Pickle, having kiſſed the ſubſcription with great ardour, fell upon his knees, and lifting up his eyes—"Thank Heaven!" cried he with an air of tranſport, "I have not been miſtaken in my opinion of that generous maid. I believed her inſpired with the moſt dignified and heroic ſentiments, and now ſhe gives me a convincing proof of her magnanimity: it is now my

business to approve myself worthy of her regard. May Heaven inflict upon me the keenest arrows of its vengeance, if I do not, at this instant, contemplate the character of Emilia with the most perfect love and adoration! yet, amiable and enchanting as she is, I am, more than ever, determined to sacrifice the interest of my passion to my glory, though my life should fail in the contest; and even to refuse an offer, which otherwise the whole universe should not bribe me to forego."

This declaration was not so unexpected as unwelcome to his friend Gauntlet, who represented that his glory was not at all interested in the affair; because he had already vindicated his generosity, in repeated proffers to lay his whole fortune at Emilia's feet, when it was impossible that any thing selfish could enter into the proposal; but that, in rejecting her present purpose, he would give the world an opportunity to say that his pride was capricious, his obstinacy invincible, and his sister would have undeniable reason to believe, that either his passion for her was dissembled, or the ardour of it considerably abated.

In answer to these remonstrances, Pickle observed, that he had long set the world at defiance; and as to the opinion of Emilia, he did not doubt that she would applaud in her heart the resolution he had taken, and do justice to the purity of his intentions.

It was not an easy task to divert our hero from his designs at any time of life; but since his confinement his inflexibility was become almost insurmountable. The captain, therefore, after having discharged his conscience, in assuring him that his sister's happiness was at stake, that his mother had approved of the step she had taken, and that he himself should be extremely mortified at his refusal, forbore to press him with farther argument, which served only to rivet him the more strongly in his own opinion; and undertook to deliver this answer to Emilia's letter.

'MADAM,

'THAT I revere the dignity of your virtue with

'the utmoſt veneration, and love you infinitely more 'than life, I am at all times ready to demonſtrate; 'but the ſacrifice to honour it is now my turn to pay; 'and ſuch is the rigour of my deſtiny, that, in order 'to juſtify your generoſity, I muſt refuſe to profit by 'your condeſcenſion. Madam, I am doomed to be 'for ever wretched, and to ſigh without ceaſing for 'the poſſeſſion of that jewel, which, though now in 'my offer, I dare not enjoy. I ſhall not pretend to 'expreſs the anguiſh that tears my heart, whilſt I 'communicate this fatal renunciation; but appeal to 'the delicacy of your own ſentiments, which can judge 'of my ſufferings, and will, doubtleſs, do juſtice to the 'ſelf-denial of your forlorn 'P. PICKLE.'

Emilia, who knew the nicety of our hero's pride, had foreſeen the purport of this epiſtle before it came to her hands; ſhe did not therefore deſpair of ſucceſs, nor deſiſt from the proſecution of her plan, which was no other than that of ſecuring her own happineſs, in eſpouſing the man upon whom ſhe had fixed her unalterable affection. Confident of his honour, and fully ſatisfied of the mutual paſſion with which they were inſpired, ſhe gradually decoyed him into a literary correſpondence, wherein ſhe attempted to refute the arguments on which he grounded his refuſal; and, without doubt, the young gentleman was not a little pleaſed with the enjoyment of ſuch delightful commerce, in the courſe of which he had (more than ever) an opportunity of admiring the poignancy of her wit, and the elegance of her underſtanding.

The contemplation of ſuch excellency, while it ſtrengthened the chains with which ſhe held him enſlaved, added emulation to the other motives that induced him to maintain the diſpute; and much ſubtlety of reaſoning was expended upon both ſides of this very particular queſtion, without any proſpect of conviction on either part; till at laſt ſhe began to deſpair of making him a proſelyte to her opinion by dint of argument, and reſolved for the future to apply herſelf chiefly to

the irreſiſtible prepoſſeſſions of his love, which were not at all diminiſhed or impaired by the eſſays of her pen. With this view ſhe propoſed a conference, pretending that it was impoſſible to convey all her reflections upon this ſubject in a ſeries of ſhort letters; and Godfrey undertook to bail him for the day: but, conſcious of her power, he would not truſt himſelf in her preſence, though his heart throbbed with all the eagerneſs of deſire to ſee her fair eyes diſrobed of that reſentment which they had worn ſo long, and to enjoy the raviſhing ſweets of a fond reconciliation.

Nature could not have held out againſt ſuch powerful attacks, had not the pride and caprice of his diſpoſition been gratified to the full in the triumph of his reſiſtance; he looked upon the conteſt as altogether original, and perſevered with obſtinacy, becauſe he thought himſelf ſure of favourable terms, whenever he ſhould be diſpoſed to capitulate. Perhaps he might have over-ſhot himſelf in the courſe of his perſeverance: a young lady of Emilia's fortune and attractions could not fail to find herſelf ſurrounded by temptations which few women can reſiſt. She might have miſinterpreted the meaning of ſome paragraph, or taken umbrage at an unguarded expreſſion in one of Peregrine's letters: ſhe might have been tired out by his obſtinate peculiarity; or at the long run, conſtrued it into madneſs, ſlight, or indifference; or, rather than waſte her prime in fruitleſs endeavours to ſubdue the pride of an headſtrong humouriſt, ſhe might have liſtened to the voice of ſome admirer fraught with qualifications ſufficient to engage her eſteem and affection. But all theſe poſſibilities were providentially prevented by an accident, attended with more important conſequences than any we have hitherto recounted.

Early one morning, Pipes was diſturbed by the arrival of a meſſenger, who had been ſent expreſs from the country by Mr. Clover, with a packet for the lieutenant, and arrived in town over night; but as he was obliged to have recourſe to the information of Jack's

correſpondent

correspondent in the city, touching the place of his abode, before he demanded entrance at the Fleet, the gate was shut; nor would the turnkeys admit him, although he told them he was charged with a message of the utmost consequence; so that he was fain to tarry till day break, when he, at his earnest solicitation, was allowed to enter.

Hatchway, opening the packet, found a letter inclosed for Peregrine, with an earnest request that he should forward it to the hands of that young gentleman with all possible dispatch. Jack, who could not dive into the meaning of this extraordinary injunction, began to imagine that Mrs. Clover lay at the point of death, and wanted to take her last farewell of her brother; and this conceit worked so strongly upon his imagination, that, while he huddled on his cloaths, and made the best of his way to the apartment of our hero, he could not help cursing, within himself, the folly of the husband in sending such disagreeable messages to a man of Peregrine's impatient temper, already soured by his own uneasy situation.

This reflection would have induced him to suppress the letter, had not he been afraid to tamper with the ticklish disposition of his friend, to whom, while he delivered it, "As for my own part," said he, "mayhap I may have as much natural affection as another; but, when my spouse parted, I bore my misfortune like a British man and a Christian: for, why? he's no better than a fresh water sailor, who knows not how to stem the current of mischance."

Pickle being waked from a pleasant dream, in which the fair Emilia was principally concerned, and hearing this strange preamble, sat up in his bed, and unsealed the letter in a state of mortification and disgust: but what were the emotions of his soul, when he read the following intimation!

'DEAR BROTHER,

'IT hath pleased God to take your father suddenly 'off by a fit of apoplexy; and he has died intestate.

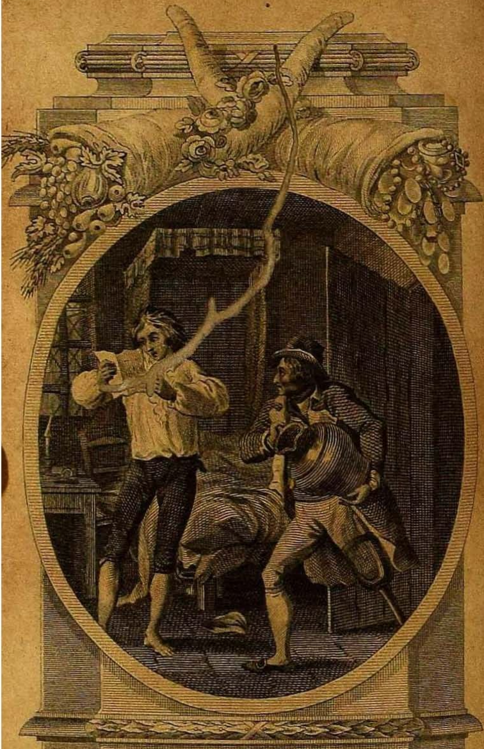
 'I give

'I give you this notice, that you may, with all speed, 'come down and take possession of your right in despite of Master Gam and his mother, who, you may 'be sure, do not sit easy under this unexpected dispensation of Providence. I have, by virtue of being 'justice of the peace, taken such precautions as I 'thought necessary for your advantage; and the funeral shall be deferred until your pleasure be known. 'Your sister, though severely afflicted by her father's 'fate, submits to the will Heaven with laudable resignation, and begs you will set out for this place without delay; in which request she is joined by, Sir, 'your affectionate brother, and humble servant,

'CHARLES CLOVER.'

Peregrine, at first, looked upon this epistle as a mere illusion of the brain, and a continuation of the reverie in which he had been engaged. He read it ten times over, without being persuaded that he was actually awake; he rubbed his eyes, and shook his head, in order to shake off the drowsy vapours that surrounded him; he hemm'd thrice with great vociferation, snapped his fingers, tweaked his nose, started up from his bed, and opening the casement, took a survey of the well-known objects that appeared on each side of his habitation. Every thing seemed congruous and connected, and he said, within himself, "Sure this is the most distinct dream that ever sleep produced." Then he had recourse again to the paper, which he carefully perused, without finding any variation from his first notion of the contents.

Hatchway, seeing all his extravagancies of action, accompanied with a wild stare of distraction, began to believe that his head was at length fairly turned, and was really meditating means for securing his person; when Pickle, in a tone of surprize, exclaimed, "Good God! am I or am I not awake?"—"Why look ye, Cousin Pickle," replied the lieutenant, "that is a question which the deep sea-line of my understanding is not long enough to sound; but, howsomever, tho'f I can't



PEREGRINE PICKLE.

Peregrine's agitation on the news of his succession to his fathers fortune considered as a delirium by Hatchway who discharges a pitcher of water at him.

Vide Vol. IV. Chap. 18. Page 295.

Drawn by R. Corbould Engraved by C. Warren for C. Cooke. Feb. 1. 1793.

can't truft to the obfervation I have taken, it fhall go hard but I will fall upon a way to guefs whereabouts we are." So faying, he lifted up a pitcher full of cold water, that ftood behind the outward door, and difcharged it in the face of Peregrine without ceremony or hefitation.

This remedy produced the defired effect: unpalatable as it was, the young gentleman no fooner recovered his breath, which was endangered by fuch a fudden application, than he thanked his friend Jack for the feafonable operation he had performed. Having no longer any juft reafon to doubt the reality of what appeared fo convincingly to his fenfes, he fhifted himfelf on the inftant, not without hurry and trepidation; and putting on his morning drefs, fallied forth to the *Bare*, in order to deliberate with himfelf on the important intelligence he had received.

Hatchway, not yet fully convinced of his fanity, and curious to know the purport of the letter, which had affected him in fo extraordinary a manner, carefully attended his footfteps in this excurfion, in hope of being favoured with his confidence in the courfe of their perambulation. Our hero no fooner appeared at the ftreet-door, than he was faluted by the meffenger, who having pofted himfelf in the way for that purpofe, "God blefs your noble honour, 'Squire Pickle," cried he, "and give you joy of fucceeding to your father's eftate!" Thefe words had fcarce proceeded from his mouth, when the lieutenant, hopping eagerly towards the countryman, fqueezed his hand with great affection, and afked if the old gentleman had actually taken his departure. "Aye, Mafter Hatchway," replied the other, "in fuch a woundy hafte, that he forgot to make a will."—"Body of me!" exclaimed the feaman, "thefe are the beft tidings I have heard fince I firft went to fea. Here, my lad, take my purfe, and ftow thyfelf chocque full of the beft liquor in the land." So faying, he tipped the peafant with ten pieces, and immediately the whole place echoed with the

the ſound of Tom's inſtrument. Peregrine, repairing to the walk, communicated the billet to his honeſt friend, who at his deſire went forthwith to the lodgings of Captain Gauntlet, and returned in leſs than half an hour with that gentleman, who (I need not ſay) was heartily rejoiced at the occaſion.

CHAP. XIX.

Peregrine holds a Conſultation with his Friends, in Conſequence of which he bids adieu to the Fleet. He arrives at his Father's Houſe, and aſſerts his Right of Inheritance.

NOR did our hero keep the miſanthrope in ignorance of this happy turn of fortune: Pipes was diſpatched to the ſenior with a meſſage, requeſting his immediate preſence; and he accordingly appeared, in obedience to the ſummons, growling with diſcontent, for having been deprived of ſeveral hours of his natural reſt. His mouth was immediately ſtopped with the letter, at which he *ſmiled horrible a ghaſtly grin*; and, after a compliment of congratulation, they entered into cloſe divan, about the meaſures to be taken in conſequence of this event.

There was no room for much debate: it was unanimouſly agreed, that Pickle ſhould ſet out with all poſſible diſpatch for the garriſon, to which Gauntlet and Hatchway reſolved to attend him. Pipes was accordingly ordered to prepare a couple of poſt-chaiſes, while Godfrey went to procure bail for his friend, and provide them with money for the expence of the expedition, but not before he was deſired by Peregrine to conceal this piece of news from his ſiſter, that our youth might have an opportunity to ſurprize her in a more intereſting manner, after he ſhould have ſettled his affairs.

All theſe previous ſteps being taken, in leſs than an hour our hero took his leave of the Fleet, after he had left twenty guineas with the warden for the relief of the poor priſoners, a great number of whom convoyed him

him to the gate, pouring forth prayers for his long life and prosperity; and he took the road to the garrison, in the most elevated transports of joy, unallayed with the least mixture of grief at the death of a parent whose paternal tenderness he had never known. His breast was absolutely a stranger to that boasted Στοργὴ, or instinct of affection, by which the charities are supposed to subsist.

Of all the journies he had ever made, this, sure, was the most delightful: he felt all the extasy that must naturally be produced in a young man of his imagination from such a sudden transition in point of circumstance; he found himself delivered from confinement and disgrace, without being obliged to any person upon earth for his deliverance; he had it now in his power to retort the contempt of the world in a manner suited to his most sanguine wish; he was reconciled to his friend, and enabled to gratify his love, even upon his own terms; and saw himself in possession of a fortune more ample than his first inheritance, with a stock of experience that would steer him clear of all those quicksands, among which he had been formerly wrecked.

In the middle of their journey, while they halted at at an inn for a short refreshment and change of horses, a postilion running up to Peregrine in the yard, fell at his feet, clasped his knees with great eagerness and agitation, and presented to him the individual face of his old valet de chambre. The youth perceiving him in such an abject garb and attitude, commanded him to rise and tell the cause of such a miserable reverse in his fortune. Upon which Hadgi gave him to understand, that he had been ruined by his wife, who having robbed him of all his cash and valuable effects, had eloped from his house with one of his own customers, who appeared in the character of a French count, but was in reality no other than an Italian fidler; that, in consequence of this retreat, he (the husband) was disabled from paying a considerable sum which he had set apart for his wine-merchant; who being disappointed

in

in his expectation, took out an execution againſt his effects; and the reſt of his creditors following his example, hunted him out of houſe and home: ſo that finding his perſon in danger at London, he had been obliged to eſcape into the country, ſkulking about from one village to another, till being quite deſtitute of all ſupport, he had undertaken his preſent office, to ſave himſelf from ſtarving.

Peregrine liſtened with compaſſion to his lamentable tale, which too well accounted for his not appearing in the Fleet, with offers of ſervice to his maſter in diſtreſs; a circumſtance that Pickle had all along imputed to his avarice and ingratitude. He aſſured him, that as he had been the means of throwing in his way the temptation to which he fell a ſacrifice, he would charge himſelf with the retrieval of his affairs: in the mean time, he made him taſte of his bounty, and deſired him to continue in his preſent employment until he ſhould return from the garriſon, when he would conſider his ſituation, and do ſomething for his immediate relief.

Hadgi attempted to kiſs his ſhoe, and wept, or affected to weep, with ſenſibility at this gracious reception; he even made a merit of his unwillingneſs to exerciſe his new occupation, and earneſtly begged that he might be allowed to give immediate attendance upon his dear maſter, from whom he could not bear the thoughts of a ſecond parting. His intreaties were reinforced by the interceſſion of his two friends, in conſequence of which the Swiſs was permitted to follow them at his own leiſure, while they ſet forwards after a ſlight repaſt, and reached the place of their deſtination before ten o'clock at night.

Peregrine, inſtead of alighting at the garriſon, rode ſtraightway to his father's houſe: and no perſon appearing to receive him, not even a ſervant to take care of his chaiſe, he diſmounted without aſſiſtance. Being followed by his two friends, he advanced into the hall, where perceiving a bell-rope, he made immediate application to it in ſuch a manner as brought a couple of

footmen

footmen into his preſence. After having reprimanded them with a ſtern look, for their neglect in point of attendance, he commanded them to ſhew him into an apartment; and as they ſeemed unwilling to yield obedience to his orders, aſked if they did not belong to the family.

One of them, who took upon himſelf the office of ſpokeſman, replied with a ſullen air, that they had been in the ſervice of old Mr. Pickle, and now that he was dead, thought themſelves bound to obey nobody but their lady, and her ſon Mr. Gamaliel. This declaration had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when our hero gave them to underſtand, that ſince they were not diſpoſed to own any other maſter, they muſt change their quarters immediately. He ordered them to decamp without farther preparation; and as they ſtill continued reſtive, they were kicked out of doors by the captain and his friend Hatchway. Squire Gam, who overheard every thing that paſſed, and was now more than ever inflamed with that rancour which he had ſucked with his mother's milk, flew to the aſſiſtance of his adherents, with a piſtol in each hand, bellowing, 'Thieves! thieves!' with great vociferation, as if he had miſtaken the buſineſs of the ſtrangers, and actually believed himſelf in danger of being robbed. Under this pretence he diſcharged a piece at his brother, who luckily eſcaped the ſhot, cloſed with him in a moment, and wreſting the other piſtol from his gripe, turned him out into the court-yard, to the conſolation of his two dependents.

By this time, Pipes and the two poſtilions had taken poſſeſſion of the ſtables, without being oppoſed by the coachman and his deputy, who quiely ſubmitted to the authority of their new ſovereign: but the noiſe of the piſtol had alarmed Mrs. Pickle, who running down ſtairs with the moſt frantic appearance, attended by two maids and the curate, who ſtill maintained his place of chaplain and ghoſtly director in the family, would have aſſaulted our hero with her nails had ſhe

not

not been reſtrained by her attendants. Though they prevented her from uſing her hands, they could not hinder her from exerciſing her tongue, which ſhe wagged againſt him with all her virulence of malice. She aſked, if he was come to butcher his brother, to inſult his father's corpſe, and triumph in her affliction; ſhe beſtowed upon him the epithets of ſpendthrift, gaol-bird, and unnatural ruffian: ſhe begged pardon of God for having brought ſuch a monſter into the world; accuſed him of having brought his father's grey hairs with ſorrow to the grave; and affirmed, that were he to touch the body, it would bleed at his approach.

Without pretending to refute the articles of this ridiculous charge, he allowed her to ring out her alarm; and then calmly replied, that if ſhe did not quietly retire to her chamber, and behave as became a perſon in her preſent ſituation, he ſhould inſiſt upon her removing to another lodging without delay; for he was determined to be maſter in his own family. The lady, who in all probability expected that he would endeavour to appeaſe her with all the tenderneſs of filial ſubmiſſion, was ſo much exaſperated at his cavalier behaviour, that her conſtitution could not ſupport the tranſports of her ſpirits; and ſhe was carried off by her women in a fit, while the officious clergyman was diſmiſſed after his pupil, with all the circumſtances of diſgrace.

Our hero having thus made his quarters good, took poſſeſſion of the beſt apartment in the houſe, and ſent notice of his arrival to Mr. Clover; who, with his wife, viſited him in leſs than an hour, and was not a little ſurprized to find him ſo ſuddenly ſettled in his father's houſe. The meeting of Julia and her brother was extremely pathetic. She had always loved him with uncommon tenderneſs, and looked upon him as the ornament of her family; but ſhe had heard of his extravagancies with regret; and though ſhe conſidered the ſtories that were circulated at his expence, as the malicious exaggerations of his mother and her darling

son, her apprehension had been grievously alarmed by an account of his imprisonment and distress, which had been accidentally conveyed to that country by a gentleman from London, who had been formerly of his acquaintance; she could not, therefore, without the most tender emotions of joy, see him, as it were, restored to his rightful inheritance, and re-established in that station of life which she thought he could fill with dignity and importance.

After their mutual expressions of affection, she retired to her mother's chamber, with a view to make a second offer of her service and attendance, which had been already rejected with scorn since her father's death; while Peregrine consulted his brother-in-law about the affairs of the family; so far as they had fallen within his cognizance and observation.

Mr. Clover told him, that though he was never favoured with the confidence of the defunct, he knew some of his intimates, who had been tampered with by Mrs. Pickle, and even engaged to second the remonstrances by which she had often endeavoured to persuade her husband to settle his affairs by a formal will; but that he had from time to time evaded their importunities with surprizing excuses of procrastination, that plainly appeared to be the result of invention and design, far above the supposed pitch of his capacity: a circumstance from which Mr. Clover concluded, that the old gentleman imagined his life would not have been secure, had he once taken such a step as would have rendered it unnecessary to the independence of his second son. He moreover observed, that in consequence of this information, he no sooner heard of Mr. Pickle's death, which happened at the club, than he went directly with a lawyer to his house, before any cabal or conspiracy could be formed against the rightful heir; and, in presence of witnesses provided for the purpose, sealed up all the papers of the deceased, after the widow had, in the first transports of her sorrow and

vexation, fairly owned that her husband had died intestate.

Peregrine was extremely well satisfied with this intelligence, by which all his doubts were dispelled; and having chearfully supped with his friends on a cold collation which his brother-in-law had brought in his chariot, they retired to rest, in different chambers, after Julia had met with another repulse from her capricious mother, whose overflowing rage had now subsided into the former channel of calm inveteracy.

Next morning the house was supplied with some servants from the garrison, and preparations were made for the funeral of the deceased. Gam having taken lodgings in the neighbourhood, came with a chaise and cart to demand his mother, together with his own cloaths, and her personal effects.

Our hero, though he would not suffer him to enter the door, allowed his proposal to be communicated to the widow, who eagerly embraced the opportunity of removing; and was, with her own baggage, and that of her beloved son, conveyed to the place which he had prepared for her reception. Thither she was followed by her woman, who was desired by Peregrine to assure her mistress, that, until a regular provision could be settled upon her, she might command him in point of money, or any other accommodation in his power.

CHAP. XX.

He performs the last Offices to his Father, and returns to London upon a very interesting Design.

SUITS of mourning being provided for himself, his friends, and adherents, and every other previous measure taken suitable to the occasion, his father was interred in a private manner in the parish church; and his papers being examined, in presence of many persons of honour and integrity invited for that purpose, no will was found, or any other deed, in favour of the second son, though it appeared by the marriage-settlement, that the widow was intitled to a jointure of five

hundred

hundred pounds a year. The reſt of his papers conſiſted of Eaſt India bonds, South Sea annuities, mortgages, notes, and aſſignments, to the amount of fourſcore thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty pounds, excluſive of the houſe, plate and furniture, horſes, equipage and cattle, with the garden and park adjacent, to a very conſiderable extent.

This was a ſum that even exceeded his expectation, and could not fail to entertain his fancy with the moſt agreeable ideas. He found himſelf immediately a man of vaſt conſequence among his country neighbours, who viſited him with compliments of congratulation, and treated him with ſuch reſpect as would have effectually ſpoiled any young man of his diſpoſition, who had not the ſame advantages of experience as he had already purchaſed at a very extravagant price. Thus ſhielded with caution, he bore his proſperity with ſurprizing temperance; every body was charmed with his affability and moderation. When he made a circuit round the gentlemen of the diſtrict, in order to repay the courteſy which he owed, he was careſſed by them with uncommon aſſiduity, and adviſed to offer himſelf as a candidate for the county at the next election, which they ſuppoſed would ſoon happen, becauſe the preſent member was in a declining ſtate of health. Nor did his perſon and addreſs eſcape unheeded by the ladies, many of whom did not ſcruple to ſpread their attractions before him, with a view of captivating ſuch a valuable prize: nay, ſuch an impreſſion did this legacy make upon a certain peer, who reſided in this part of the country, that he cultivated Pickle's acquaintance with great eagerneſs; and, without circumlocution, offered to him in marriage his only daughter, with a very conſiderable fortune.

Our hero expreſſed himſelf upon this occaſion as became a man of honour, ſenſibility, and politeneſs; and frankly gave his lordſhip to underſtand, that his heart was already engaged. He was pleaſed with the opportunity of making ſuch a ſacrifice to his paſſion for

Emilia, which, by this time, inflamed his thoughts to ſuch a degree of impatience, that he reſolved to depart for London with all poſſible ſpeed; and for that purpoſe induſtriouſly employed almoſt every hour of his time in regulating his domeſtic affairs. He paid off all his father's ſervants, and hired others, at the recommendation of his ſiſter, who promiſed to ſuperintend his houſhold in his abſence: he advanced the firſt half-yearly payment of his mother's jointure; and as for his brother Gam, he gave him divers opportunities of acknowledging his faults, ſo as that he might have anſwered to his own conſcience for taking any ſtep in his favour; but that young gentleman was not yet ſufficiently humbled by misfortune, and not only forbore to make any overtures of peace, but alſo took all occaſions to ſlander the conduct and revile the perſon of our hero, being in this practice comforted and abetted by his righteous mamma.

Every thing being thus ſettled for the preſent, the triumvirate ſet out on their return to town in the ſame manner with that in which they had arrived in the country, except in this ſmall variation, that Hatchway's chaiſe companion was now the valet de chambre refitted, inſtead of Pipes, who, with another lacquey, attended them on horſeback. When they had performed two-thirds of their way to London, they chanced to overtake a country ſquire, on his return from a viſit to one of his neighbours, who had entertained him with ſuch hoſpitality, that (as the lieutenant obſerved) he rolled himſelf almoſt gunwale to at every motion of his horſe, which was a fine hunter: and when the chaiſes paſſed him at full ſpeed he ſet up the ſportſman's halloo, in a voice that ſounded like a French-horn, clapping ſpurs to Sorrel at the ſame time, in order to keep up with the pace of the machine.

Peregrine, who was animated with an uncommon flow of ſpirits, ordered his poſtilion to proceed more ſoftly; and entered into converſation with the ſtranger, touching the make and mettle of his horſe, upon which

he

he descanted with so much learning, that the squire was astonished at his knowledge. When they approached his habitation, he invited the young gentleman and his company to halt, and drink a bottle of his ale; and was so pressing in his solicitation, that they complied with his request. He accordingly conducted them through a spacious avenue, that extended as far as the highway, to the gate of a large *chateau*, of a most noble and venerable appearance, which induced them to alight and view the apartments, contrary to their first intention of drinking a glass of his October at the door.

The rooms were every way suitable to the magnificence of the outside, and our hero imagined they had made a tour through the whole sweep, when the landlord gave him to understand, that they had not yet seen the best apartment of the house, and immediately led them into a spacious dining-room, which Peregrine did not enter without giving manifest signs of uncommon astonishment. The pannels all round were covered with portraits, all at length, by Vandyke; and not one of them appeared without a ridiculous tye-periwig, in the style of those that usually hang over the shops of two-penny barbers. The strait boots in which the figures had been originally painted, and the other circumstances of attitude and foppery, so inconsistent with this monstrous furniture of the head, exhibited such a ludicrous appearance, that Pickle's wonder, in a little time, gave way to his mirth, and he was seized with a violent fit of laughter which had well nigh deprived him of his breath.

The squire, half pleased and half offended at this expression of ridicule, 'I know,' said he, 'what makes you laugh so woefully: you think it strange to zee my vorefathers booted and spurred, with huge three-tailed periwigs on their pates. The truth of the matter is this; I could not abide to zee the pictures of my vamily with a parcel of loose hair hanging about their eyes, like zo many colts; and zo I employed a painter

yellow from London to clap decent periwigs upon their ſkulls, at the rate of vive ſhillings a head, and offered him three ſhillings a-piece to furniſh each with an handſome pair of ſhoes and ſtockings: but the raſcal, thinking I muſt have 'em done at any price after their heads were covered, haggled with me for vour ſhillings a picture; and zo rather than be impoſed upon, I turned him off, and ſhall let 'em ſtand as they are, till zome more reaſonable brother of the bruſh comes round the country.'

Pickle commended his reſolution, though in his heart he bleſſed himſelf from ſuch a barbarous Goth; and, after they had diſpatched two or three bottles of his beer, they proceeded on their journey, and arrived in town about eleven at night.

CHAP. XXI.

He enjoys an Interview with Emelia, and makes himſelf ample amends for all the Mortifications of his Life.

GODFREY, who had taken leave of his ſiſter, on pretence of making a ſhort excurſion with Peregrine, whoſe health required the enjoyment of freſh air after his long confinement, ſent a meſſage to her that ſame night, announcing his arrival, and giving her notice that he would breakfaſt with her next morning; when he and our hero, who had dreſſed himſelf for the purpoſe, taking a hackney-coach, repaired to her lodging, and were introduced into a parlour adjoining to that in which the tea-table was ſet. Here they had not waited many minutes, when they heard the ſound of feet coming down ſtairs; upon which our hero's heart began to beat the alarm. He concealed himſelf behind the ſcreen, by the direction of his friend, whoſe ears being ſaluted with Sophy's voice from the next room, he flew into it with great ardour, and enjoyed upon her lips the ſweet tranſports of a meeting ſo unexpected; for he had left her in her father's houſe at Windſor.

Amidſt theſe emotions, he had almoſt forgot the ſituation

ation of Peregrine; when Emilia, aſſuming an inchanting air, "Is not this," ſaid ſhe, "a moſt provoking ſcene to a young woman like me, who am doomed to wear the willow by the ſtrange caprice of my lover? Upon my word, brother, you have done me infinite prejudice, in promoting this jaunt with my obſtinate correſpondent; who, I ſuppoſe, is ſo raviſhed with his tranſient glimpſe of liberty, that he will never be perſuaded to incur unneceſſary confinement for the future." —"My dear ſiſter," replied the captain, tauntingly, "your own pride ſet him the example, ſo you muſt e'en ſtand to the conſequence of his imitation."—"It is a hard caſe, however," anſwered the fair offender, "that I ſhould ſuffer all my life, by one venial treſpaſs. Heigh-ho! who would imagine that a ſprightly girl, ſuch as I, with ten thouſand pounds, ſhould go a begging? I have a good mind to marry the next perſon that aſks me the queſtion, in order to be revenged upon this unyielding humouriſt. Did the dear fellow diſcover no inclination to ſee me in all the term of his releaſement? Well, if ever I can catch the fugitive again, he ſhall ſing in his cage for life."

It is impoſſible to convey to the reader a juſt idea of Peregrine's tranſports, while he overheard this declaration; which was no ſooner pronounced, than, unable to reſiſt the impetuoſity of his paſſion, he ſprung from his lurking place, exclaiming—"Here I ſurrender!" and ruſhing into her preſence, was ſo dazzled with her beauty, that his ſpeech failed; he was fixed, like a ſtatue, to the floor, and all his faculties were abſorpt in admiration. Indeed, ſhe was now in the full bloom of her charms, and it was nearly impoſſible to look upon her without emotion. What then muſt have been the extaſy of our youth, whoſe paſſion was whetted with all the incitements which could ſtimulate the human heart! The ladies ſcreamed with ſurprize at his appearance, and Emilia underwent ſuch agitation as fluſhed every charm with irreſiſtible energy: her cheeks glowed with a moſt delicate ſuffuſion, and her boſom

heaved with ſuch bewitching undulation, that the cambric could not conceal or contain the ſnowy hemiſpheres that roſe like a viſion of paradiſe to his view.

While he was almoſt fainting with unutterable delight, ſhe ſeemed ready to ſink under the tumults of tenderneſs and confuſion; when our hero, perceiving her condition, obeyed the impulſe of his love, and circled the charmer in his arms, without ſuffering the leaſt frown or ſymptom of diſpleaſure. Not all the pleaſures of his life had amounted to the ineffable joy of this embrace, in which he continued for ſome minutes totally entranced. He faſtened upon her pouting lips with all the eagerneſs of rapture; and, while his brain ſeemed to whirl round with tranſport, exclaimed in a delirium of bliſs, 'Heaven and earth! this is too much to bear.'

His imagination was accordingly relieved, and his attention in ſome meaſure divided, by the interpoſition of Sophy, who kindly chid him for his having overlooked his old friends: thus accoſted, he quitted his delicious armful, and ſaluting Mrs. Gauntlet, aſked pardon for his neglect; obſerving that ſuch rudeneſs was excuſable, conſidering the long and unhappy exile which he had ſuffered from the jewel of his ſoul. Then turning to Emilia, "I am come, Madam," ſaid he, "to claim the performance of your promiſe, which I can produce under your own fair hand: you may, therefore, lay aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony and ſhyneſs, and crown my happineſs without farther delay; for, upon my ſoul! my thoughts are wound up to the laſt pitch of expectation, and I ſhall certainly run diſtracted if I am doomed to any term of probation."

His miſtreſs having by this time recollected herſelf, replied with a moſt exhilarating ſmile, "I ought to puniſh you for your obſtinacy with the mortification of a twelvemonth's trial; but 'tis dangerous to tamper with an admirer of your diſpoſition; and therefore I think I muſt make ſure of you while it is in my power."—"You are willing, then, to take me for better

ter for worſe in preſence of Heaven and theſe witneſſes?" cried Peregrine kneeling, and applying her hand to his lips. At this interrogation, her features ſoftened into an amazing expreſſion of condeſcending love: and whilſt ſhe darted a ſide-glance that thrilled to his marrow, and heaved a ſigh more ſoft than Zephyr's balmy wing, her anſwer was, "Why—aye—and Heaven grant me patience to bear the humours of ſuch a yoke-fellow."—"And may the ſame powers," replied the youth, "grant me life and opportunity to manifeſt the immenſity of my love! Meanwhile, I have eighty thouſand pounds, which ſhall be laid immediately in your lap."

So ſaying, he ſealed the contract upon her lips, and explained the myſtery of his laſt words, which had begun to operate upon the wonder of the two ſiſters. Sophy was agreeably ſurprized with the account of his good fortune; nor was it, in all probability, unacceptable to the lovely Emilia; though, from this information, ſhe took an opportuuity to upbraid her admirer with the inflexibility of his pride, which (ſhe ſcrupled not to ſay) would have baffled all the ſuggeſtions of his paſſion, had not it been gratified by this providential event.

Matters being thus happily matured, the lover begged that immediate recourſe might be had to the church, and his happineſs aſcertained before night. But the bride objected, with great vehemence, to ſuch precipitation, being deſirous of her mother's preſence at the ceremony; and ſhe was ſeconded in her opinion by her brother's wife. Peregrine, maddening with deſire, aſſaulted her with the moſt earneſt intreaties, repreſenting, that as her mother's conſent was already obtained, there was ſurely no neceſſity for a delay, that muſt infallibly make a dangerous impreſſion upon his brain and conſtitution. He fell at her feet in all the agony of impatience; ſwore that his life and intellects would actually be in jeopardy by her refuſal; and when ſhe attempted to argue him out of his demand,

began to rave with ſuch extravagance, that Sophy was frightened into conviction: and Godfrey enforcing the remonſtrances of his friend, the amiable Emilia was teazed into compliance.

After breakfaſt the bridegroom and his companion ſet out for the Commons for a licence, having firſt agreed upon the houſe at which the ceremony ſhould be performed, in the lodgings of the bride: and the permiſſion being obtained, they found means to engage a clergyman, who undertook to attend them at their own time and place. Then a ring was purchaſed for the occaſion; and they went in ſearch of the lieutenant, with whom they dined at a tavern, and not only made him acquainted with the ſteps they had taken, but deſired that he would ſtand father to the bride: an employment which Jack accepted with demonſtrations of particular ſatisfaction; till chancing to look into the ſtreet, and ſeeing Cadwallader approach the door, in conſequence of a meſſage they had ſent to him by Pipes, he declined the office in favour of the ſenior; who was accordingly ordained for that purpoſe, on the ſuppoſition that ſuch a mark of regard might facilitate his concurrence with a match, which otherwiſe he would certainly oppoſe, as he was a profeſſed enemy to wedlock, and as yet ignorant of Peregrine's intention.

After having congratulated Pickle upon his ſucceſſion, and ſhook his two friends by the hand, the miſanthrope aſked whoſe mare was dead, that he was ſummoned in ſuch a plaguy hurry from his dinner, which he had been fain to gobble up like a cannibal. Our hero gave him to underſtand, that they had made an appointment to drink tea with two agreeable ladies, and were unwilling that he ſhould loſe the opportunity of enjoying an entertainment which he loved ſo much. Crabtree, ſhrivelling up his face like an autumn leaf at this intimation, curſed his complaiſance, and ſwore they ſhould keep their aſſignation without him, for he and letchery had ſhook hands many years ago.

The bridegroom, however, likening him unto an old coachman

coachman who ſtill delights in the ſmack of the whip, and dropping ſome flattering hints of his manhood even at theſe years, he was gradually prevailed upon to accompany them to the place of rendezvous; where, being uſhered into a dining-room, they had not waited three minutes, when they were joined by the parſon, who had obſerved the hour with great punctuality.

This gentleman no ſooner entered the room, than Cadwallader, in a whiſper to Gauntlet, aſked if that was not the cock bawd; and before the captain could make any reply, "What an unconſcionable whoremaſter the rogue is!" ſaid he; "ſcarce diſcharged from confinement, and ſweetened with a little freſh air, when he wenches with a pimp in canonicals in his pay." The door again opened, and Emilia broke in upon them with ſuch dignity of mien, and divinity of aſpect, as inſpired every ſpectator with aſtoniſhment and admiration. The lieutenant, who had not ſeen her ſince her charms were ripened into ſuch perfection, expreſſed his wonder and approbation in an exclamation of, "Add's zooks! what a glorious galley!" and the miſanthrope's viſage was inſtantly metamorphoſed into the face of a mountain goat. He licked his lips inſtinctively, ſnuffed the air, and ſquinted with a moſt horrible obliquity of viſion.

The bride and her ſiſter being ſeated, and Hatchway having renewed his acquaintance with the former, who recognized him with particular civility, Peregrine withdrew into another apartment with his friend Crabtree, to whom he imparted the deſign of this meeting; which the latter no ſooner underſtood, than he attempted to retreat without partaking any other reply than that of, "Pſhaw! rot your matrimony! can't you put your neck in the nooſe without my being a witneſs of your folly?"

The young gentleman, in order to vanquiſh this averſion, ſtepped to the door of the next room, and begged the favour of ſpeaking with Emilia, to whom he introduced the teſty old batchelor, as one of his par-

particular friends, who desired to have the honour of giving her away. The bewitching smile with which she received his salute, and granted his request, at once overcame the disapprobation of the misanthrope, who with a relaxation in his countenance, which had never been perceived before that instant, thanked her in the most polite terms, for such an agreeable mark of distinction. He accordingly led her into the dining-room, where the ceremony was performed without delay; and after the husband had asserted his prerogative on her lips, the whole company saluted her by the name of Mrs. Pickle.

I shall leave the sensible reader to judge what passed at this juncture, within the bosoms of the new-married couple: Peregrine's heart was fired with inexpressible ardour and impatience; while the transports of the bride were mingled with a dash of diffidence and apprehension. Gauntlet saw it would be too much for both, to bear their present tantalizing situation till night, without some amusement to divert their thoughts; and therefore proposed to pass part of the evening at the publick entertainments at Marybone Gardens, which were at that time frequented by the best company in town. The scheme was relished by the discreet Sophy, who saw the meaning of the proposal, and the bride submitted to the persuasion of her sister; so that, after tea, two coaches were called, and Peregrine was forcibly separated from his charmer during the conveyance.

The new-married couple and their company having made shift to spend the evening, and supped on a slight collation in one of the boxes, Peregrine's patience was almost quite exhausted; and taking Godfrey aside, he imparted his intention to withdraw in private from the sea-wit of his friend Hatchway, who would otherwise retard his bliss with unseasonable impediments, which, at present, he could not possibly bear. Gauntlet, who sympathized with his impatience, undertook to intoxicate the lieutenant with bumpers to the joy of the bride, and in the mean time desired Sophy to retire

with

with his ſiſter, under the auſpices of Cadwallader, who promiſed to ſquire them home.

The ladies were accordingly conducted to the coach; and Jack propoſed to the captain, that for the ſake of the joke, the bridegroom ſhould be plied with liquor in ſuch a manner as would effectually diſable him from enjoying the fruits of his good fortune for one night at leaſt. Gauntlet ſeemed to reliſh the ſcheme, and they prevailed upon Pickle to accompany them to a certain tavern on pretence of drinking a farewel glaſs to a ſingle life; there the bottle was circulated, till Hatchway's brain began to ſuffer innovation. As he had ſecured our hero's hat and ſword, he felt no apprehenſion of an elopement, which however was effected; and the youth haſtened on the wings of love to the arms of his enchanting bride. He found Crabtree in a parlour, waiting for his return, and diſpoſed to entertain him with a lecture upon temperance; to which he paid very little attention, but ringing for Emilia's maid, deſired to know if her miſtreſs was abed. Being anſwered in the affirmative, he ſent her up ſtairs to announce his arrival, undreſſed himſelf to a looſe gown and ſlippers, and wiſhing the miſanthrope good night, after having deſired to ſee him the next day, followed in perſon to the delicious ſcene, where he found her elegantly diſhed out, the faireſt daughter of chaſtity and love.

When he approached, ſhe was overwhelmed with confuſion, and hid her lovely face from his tranſporting view. Mrs. Gauntlet, ſeeing his eyes kindled at the occaſion, kiſſed her charming ſiſter; who, throwing her ſnowy arms about her neck, would have detained her in the room, had not Peregrine gently diſengaged her confidante from her embrace, and conducted her trembling to the door; which having bolted and barricadoed, he profited by his good fortune, and his felicity was perfect.

Next day he roſe about noon, and found his three friends aſſembled, when he learned that Jack had fallen in

in his own ſnare, and been obliged to lie in the ſame tavern where he fell: a circumſtance of which he was ſo much aſhamed, that Peregrine and his wife eſcaped many jokes, which he would have certainly cracked, had he not lain under the imputation of this diſgrace. In half an hour after he came down, Mrs. Pickle appeared with Sophy, bluſhing like Aurora or the goddeſs of health, and ſending forth emanations of beauty unparalleled, ſhe was complimented upon her change of ſituation by all preſent, and by none more warmly than by old Crabtree, who declared himſelf ſo well ſatisfied with his friend's fortune, as to be almoſt reconciled to that inſtitution, againſt which he had declaimed during the beſt part of his life.

An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to Mrs. Gauntlet, with an account of her daughter's marriage; a town houſe was hired, and a handſome equipage ſet up, in which the new married pair appeared at all public places, to the aſtoniſhment of our adventurer's fair-weather friends, and the admiration of all the world: for in point of figure, ſuch another couple was not to be found in the whole united kingdom. Envy deſpaired, and Detraction was ſtruck dumb, when our hero's new acceſſion of fortune was conſigned to the celebration of public fame: Emilia attracted the notice of all obſervers, from the pert Templar to the ſovereign himſelf, who was pleaſed to beſtow encomiums upon the excellence of her beauty. Many perſons of conſequence, who had dropped the acquaintance of Peregrine in the beginning of his decline, now made open efforts to cultivate his friendſhip anew: but he diſcouraged all theſe advances with the moſt mortifying diſdain; and one day, when the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged came up to him in the drawing-room, with the ſalutation of, "Your ſervant, Mr. Pickle!" he eyed him with a look of ineffable contempt; ſaying, "I ſuppoſe your lordſhip is miſtaken in your man!" and turned his head another way, in preſence of the whole court. When

When he had made a circuit round all the places frequented by the beau-monde, to the utter confuſion of thoſe againſt whom his reſentment was kindled, paid off his debts, and ſettled his money matters in town, Hatchway was diſmiſſed to the country, in order to prepare for the reception of his fair Emilia. In a few days after his departure, the whole company (Cadwallader himſelf included) ſet out for his father's houſe, and in their way took up Mrs. Gauntlet the mother, who was ſincerely rejoiced to ſee our hero in the capacity of her ſon-in-law. From her habitation they proceeded homewards at an eaſy pace; and, amidſt the acclamations of the whole pariſh, entered their own houſe, where Emilia was received in the moſt tender manner by Mr. Clover's wife, who had provided every thing for her eaſe and accommodation, and next day ſurrendered unto her the management of her own houſhold affairs.

FINIS.